SHANGHAI'S UNDECLARED

W A R

GEORGE C. BRUCE

PUBLISHER, *Shanghai Evening Post & Mercury*

PRINTED AND PUBLISHED BY THE

M E R C U R Y P R E S S

21 AVENUE EDWARD VII - - - - - SHANGHAI, CHINA

1006999

First Edition ..... December 1937
Second „ ..... January 1938
Third „ (Chinese) ..... October 1938
Fourth „ ..... December 1938

INTRODUCTION

With this fourth edition of "Shanghai's Undeclared War" it is timely to note that the great demand for George C. Bruce's book is no surprise to his associates. From the morning when he went out along the Woosung military road to report not only on Chinese felling trees across the highway, their first militant activity, but to bring back photographs as well, he kept pace with a chronological record which became almost a personal diary of his day-to-day activities.

As publisher turned reporter, he was both the pride and despair of "the desk" of The Shanghai Evening Post and Mercury. Perched in an outpost on either side of the lines, he would like as not manage to "commandeer" a telephone at press time with a new lead. I remember once when he discovered an excellent look-out across the street from the shell-torn and bomb-riddled Administration Building. He later turned it over to the troops of the Shanghai Defense Forces. But, by right of discovery, they let him stay. He had us worried one day when Japanese batteries in Jessfield Park overshot their mark and began shelling the look-out.

So it was that in compiling and annotating a daily record of the hostilities around Shanghai, from August to December, George Bruce had the advantage of knowing whereof he wrote. There have been other chronicles, depending in the main on shifting accounts in the press, incomplete because in the overnight tides of battle it was impossible to be completely accurate.

From witnessing the arrival of Chiang Kai-shek's own divisions at the North Station to watching the final stand of Chinese remnants along Jih-wei creek on one side of Nantao, and cannonading of warehouse fortresses along the Whangpoo river, the Post's publisher, reporter and war correspondent rarely missed being on the spot.

He made one of the first trips behind the Chinese lines at a time when the efforts of star correspondents from abroad to do the same were frustrated. To top it all off, the famous Victory Parade incident seemed to have been staged for his benefit. He was virtually the only newspaperman right on the scene .... and with a camera!

His book also is outstanding in its picture presentation, many of which he took himself. I like particularly the one showing the bombing of the Augusta; at the time it was kept a secret, naval authorities denying anything of the kind. He has done so well with his story of the Shanghai hostilities that it is to be hoped that he will carry on with a further historical play-by-play account of the protracted war in China.

M. C. FORD

— PREFACE —

This book has been compiled by the author with the sole object in view of presenting to the public a chronological, factual diary of the Shanghai hostilities of 1937 and the developments of the Sino-Japanese conflict in North China insofar as they directly bear on the situation as a whole.

Many of the developments and events herein chronicled were personally viewed by the author. The others were gleaned from accounts by neutral newspaper staff representatives, news agencies and statements given out by the press spokesmen, the source of which has been duly indicated in each case. There has been a studious attempt on the part of the author to avoid the incorporation into this account any expression of personal opinion.

In presenting the illustrations of this book the author realizes fully that the depiction in photographic form of the results of a modern war is no subject for delicate temperaments. No picture has, however, been incorporated into this book solely on the basis of its horror value. All photographs have, rather, been chosen for their relationship to the subject matter after a careful selection from the more than 3,000 photographs.

In conclusion, the author owes much of his success in completing this volume to Mr. C. W. Schooss, formerly of the *Shanghai Evening Post & Mercury* and to Messrs. G. A. Johansson and H. K. Sung of the Post Mercury Co., Federal Inc., U.S.A., as without their valuable assistance this would not have been possible in the limited time taken.

GEORGE C. BRUCE

DECEMBER 15, 1937
SHANGHAI, CHINA.

In Retrospect

• • • •

The "Lukouchiao Incident" of July 8, 1937, was the forerunner to large scale warfare by Japan in China when her "military machine" took the "incident" as a pretext to invade North China.

General Sung Cheh-yuen, Chairman of the Hopei-Chahar Political Council, and concurrently commander of the 29th Army, had the confidence of the Peiping authorities and, although several incidents had been created long before the "Lukouchiao Incident" in and around Peiping, it was felt that he was well informed of what was transpiring in his area and that any similar move as the "Mukden Incident" of 1931 would be doomed to failure.

The unexpected happened, however, when on July 8, Chinese and Japanese troops clashed near the south-west of Peiping, near the Marco Polo bridge (Lukouchiao) on the Peiping-Hankow Railway.

Observers at the time believed that the situation would not become aggravated and to substantiate this the morning of July 9 gave every indication that the incident would be closed and kept localized as both military commanders of the opposing forces agreed to withdraw their troops to their original positions.

However, the situation took a turn for the worse when fighting broke out on the night of July 11, at Papaoshan, six miles west of Peiping.

Japan lost no time in taking action, pouring troops into the afflicted area, while the Nanking Government in turn declared its position in the controversy by supporting the actions of General Sung.

As Japan's "military machines" in North China were solidifying their "tactical" positions and with Tokyo officialdom hopefully certain for a peaceful settlement of the issue on the spot, it presented the Hopei-Charhar Political Council with the following five demands:

1.—The 29th Army should be immediately withdrawn from the vicinity of Peiping and Tientsin.

2.—Japanese troops should be allowed to be stationed at Lukouchiao, the strategic Peiping-Hankow railway station near which the first shot of the latest Sino-Japanese clash fired on the night of July 8.

3.—Reorganization of the Hopei-Chahar Political Council and independence of its administrative powers from Nanking.

4.—Construction, with Japanese capital and technical staff, of the Tsangchow-Shihchiachuan Railway, linking the Hopei coast with Shansi.

5.—Re-affirmation of the Boxer Protocol giving Japanese and allies rights to station troops in Peiping and Tientsin.

The Nanking Government rejected these demands, however, in a forceful reply on July 19 as unacceptable to China's national integrity. Coinciding with the rejection, Generalissimo Chiang Kai-shek, on the same day, released the Government's view of the present situation, which were as follows:

1.—Any kind of settlement must not infringe upon territorial integrity and sovereign right of China.

2.—The status of the Hopei-Chahar Political Council is fixed by the Central Government and there must not be any illegal alteration.

3.—The Central Government will not agree to the removal by outside pressure of those local officials it has appointed, such as the Chairman of the Hopei-Chahar Political Council.

4.—The Central Government will not allow any restriction to be placed upon the positions now held by the 29th Army.

As troops of the Chinese 37th Division began to evacuate their position around Lukouchiao and the Yungting river on July 21, it appeared outwardly that the dispute would be settled locally.

On July 26, however, Chinese and Japanese troops opened fire on each other at Langfang, an important railway station along the Peiping-Liaoning Railway line. This clash had its repercussions in Tientsin, and the threat of large scale warfare materialized, when Chinese troops blew up the railway bridge at Yangtsun, 30 miles north-west of Tientsin, cutting the line to Peiping.

Chinese troops, on July 28, staged a counter-offensive on the Japanese positions at Langfang and Fengtai, two important stations along the Tientsin-Peiping section of the Peiping-Liaoning Railway, to open up major hostilities in the north. After fierce fighting around both villages the Chinese were eventually driven back to their positions.

On July 29, major hostilities broke out in Tientsin and by late afternoon several huge fires had broken out as Japanese air and land forces threw their weight at the Chinese in an attempt to dislodge them.

With General Sung Che-yuen taking up headquarters at Paoting on July 29, and in a Domei report from Nanking stating that Generalissimo Chiang Kai-shek had ordered on July 30 the concentration of 50,000 Central Government troops at Paoting, it was quite evident that the Nanking Government was definite in its decision to resist further aggression from Japan.

According to reports received in Shanghai, all Chinese troops had evacuated the Tientsin area by July 31, which left this ancient city as well as Hsiyuan, a village north-west of Peiping in the hands of Japanese. Also on this day, news came through of the

Tungchow massacre in which the majority of the Japanese populace as well as soldiers were killed.

The first indication that hostilities would extend southward was on August 2, when it was reported that Japanese warships were active along the Central China coast. It was also reported that the Soviet Consulate at Tientsin had been raided by Japanese plain clothesmen and White Russians, and August 3 saw official protests from the Soviets to Tokyo.

August 3 was also an eventful day as Nanking officials promised the populace of China that "something important will take place within the next two or three days." Reports from the north indicated that Japan was concentrating large armed forces in that area and that it would not be long before a wide scale operation would take place.

On August 5, Shanghai began to feel the first warning that eventually it would be drawn into the conflict as thousands of Chinese residents in Chapei prepared to evacuate the suburbs for the confines of the International Settlement and French Concession.

Hankow became the next center of news when it was learned that Japanese Marines had landed there and marched into the Japanese Concession. The following day, Aug. 7, the Japanese Concession was turned over to the Chinese authorities and a complete evacuation of Japanese of the Yangtse ports was effected.

Shanghai's Undeclared War 1937

• • • •

August 8

Japanese troops, entering Peiping, ancient capital of China, today brought the city of the Emperors under Japanese domination. Issuing a lengthy report, the military command warned the populace against any interference with "tactical operations".

"Our enemy," the report added, "is the lawless Chinese army. To crush it constitutes a step towards the establishment of lasting peace in East Asia."

The complete withdrawal of all Japanese in Hankow was effected with the arrival of four Japanese refugee ships from the upper Yangtze.

Today the China National Aviation Company's Sikorsky S-43 was lost 87 miles north of Hongkong after a forced landing caused by bad weather.

August 9

Late last evening, units of the Japanese Naval Landing Party entered Chapei, Chinese territory, increasing the local tension and providing further incentive for increased evacuation of Chinese residents in this area.

During the course of the morning, two Japanese destroyers, the Kuga and the Kuri, entered the harbor, increasing the numerical strength of the Japanese ships in the harbor to five, the other three being the Idzumo, flagship of the Elventh Torpedo Boat Flotilla, and the gunboats Ataka and Kataka.

An incident which may have the gravest complications for Shanghai occurred today when two members of the Japanese Naval Landing Party and a member of the Chinese Peace Preservation Corps were killed in a clash near the Hungjao Airdrome at 5:25 p.m.

Acting Mayor Mr. O. K. Yui was formally inaugurated as mayor of Greater Shanghai. General Tsai Ting-Kai who, as the former commander of the 19th Route Army, was the hero of the 1932 Shanghai hostilities, left for Nanking.

The Navy Department at Washington announced today that the goodwill visit of four American warships to Japan has been postponed indefinitely.

August 10

Shanghai is tense today after the shooting affair near the Hungjao Airdrome, although both Chinese and Japanese authorities have agreed to settle the matter through the usual diplomatic channels. The local Paoantui has erected sandbag emplacements at regular intervals along Hungjao Road from Rubicon Road west to the Airdrome, blocking Hungjao Road today to ordinary traffic.

Through all of this, the exodus of Chinese from the Chapei area, scene of the 1932 Sino-Japanese "undeclared war," continued unabated.

August 11

Tokio today issued an announcement to the effect that the Japanese attitude regarding the Hungjao Airdrome shooting on August 9 was hardening. A Naval spokesman is quoted as saying, "Should the Chinese maintain their present attitude and attempt to pigeon-hole this case as they have done with similar incidents in the past, we shall have to take steps to bring them to their senses."

A spokesman of the Gaimusho at Tokio in commenting on the affair today said, "All now depends on the Chinese attitude. If China intends to aggravate the situation, Japan will respond."

An evidence of the fact that Japan, if she has to respond, intends to respond effectually, was afforded today with the anchoring in the Whangpoo of nine men-of-war of the First Japanese Battle Fleet, bringing Japanese Naval strength in the Whangpoo to 27 men-of-war. The new arrivals had all guns cleared for action and immediately sent landing parties ashore.

And still the exodus by all outlets, on all types of conveyances continued, although the appearance of Japanese patrols in the Range Road Area today seemed to cause no great stir among the civilians there.

In the north, clashes were reported today along the Tientsin-Pukow Railway and along the Peiping-Suiyuan Railway. Also reported today was the extension into Charhar Province of military operations by the Japanese.

August 12

The second Japanese demarche regarding the activities of the Chinese Peace Preservation Corps near Shanghai during the past 24 hours filed this morning by Vice-Consul Ichiro Kawasaki with Mayor O. K. Yui. The three specific cases of alleged interference with Japanese business activities dealt with in the demarche were as follows:

(1) The surrounding of the Hwa Foong Cotton Mill along Woosung Creek, Woosung, by the Paoantui through the erection of sandbag barricades around the premises, completely isolating the mill.

(2) Interference with the transportation of lumber from the Mormura Lumber Yard facing on Soochow Creek opposite Brenan Road.

(3) Interference by the Paoantui with the pas-

sage of junks on Soochow Creek en route to the Nakayama Steel Works on Brenan Road, five junks being stopped at the Chungshan Road Bridge early today. Two only of the laodahs were permitted to proceed with one of the craft to inform the management of the works of the inability of the five to transport goods down the Creek.

Additional units of the Japanese Naval Landing Party were landed throughout the day from the warships anchored in the river and great activity was noticed in the Naval Landing Party Barracks.

Meanwhile, owing to the increase in the landed forces of the Japanese in the Shanghai area, Chinese authorities today enforced stringent precautionary measures in Chapei and the outlying districts, including the removal of the City Government from its offices in the beautiful new Civic Center to the French Concession.

On a tour of the Chapei area this morning by the writer the general air of tense expectancy was impossible to miss. Chinese troops, members of the 88th Division, were beginning to pour into Chapei by bus and train to take up positions behind sandbag barricades and emplacements erected last night. As a direct contrast to the general morale, equipment and demeanor of Chinese troops in years past, these troops had the appearance of well-trained foreign troops. Wearing serviceable uniforms and German-type steel helmets, they went about their duties in a business-like manner.

During the day, 2000 Japanese refugees from Yangtze River ports sailed aboard the Nagasaki Maru for the relative safety of their homeland.

In the north, several minor clashes were reported along the Peiping-Suiyuan and Tientsin-Pukow Railway lines. The Japanese appear to be making preparations for a general offensive along the three fronts of the Peiping-Suiyuan, Tientsin-Pukow and Peiping-Hankow Railways and, according to Chinese reports, general defensive preparations along these lines have already been completed.

A spectacular bit of defensive work by the Chinese in the Shanghai area was completed tonight when they sank a fleet of junks and small Japanese vessels in such a manner that a boom across the Whangpoo River was formed opposite the Nantao Bund, effectually blockading the river at this point.

August 13

Fighting, expected at any time during the past week, broke out in the Chapei area this morning when units of the Japanese Naval Landing Party advanced into Chapei across the Woosung Railway tracks and found their progress hotly disputed by the Chinese defenders.

The writer, on entering Chapei, found a Japanese light machine-gun mounted and manned at the corner of Wong Pai and Paoshan Roads. Members of the Japanese Naval Landing Party occupied observation positions on top of houses on Dong Tsi Road. Spasmodic rifle and machine gun fire from the Shanghai-Woosung Railway tracks area and the Commercial Press area were audible from Paoshan Road. The return to North Szechuen Road was effected by way of alleys, along which Japanese troops were entering Chapei to the accompaniment of intermittent rifle fire. Artillery was brought into action late this afternoon when shell fire was exchanged at intervals between Chinese and Japanese batteries.

The feeling of uncertainty in financial and business circles was given utterance today when all Chinese banks, under orders from the Ministry of Finance, closed their doors for a period of two days.

August 14

Today is one date that Shanghai will never forget. Putting their faith in the sanctity of the International Settlement and French Concession and their hope in the belief that fighting and consequent danger would be restricted to the Chinese controlled areas, Shanghai's business men and Saturday morning shoppers started the morning in the usual every-day manner. At 10:15 the first hint of danger appeared when three Chinese airplanes in two spectacular raids bombed the Whangpoo River just around the bend from Pootung Point, narrowly missing their objectives, the Japanese warships anchored there, shaking and deafening the whole business district.

The bombing by Japanese seaplanes of the Hungjao Airdrome at 1:30 this afternoon was equally ineffective as the bombs, although dropped inside the field, did little damage.

Following the Chinese air raid this morning. Vice-Admiral Hasegawa issued a warning to all Chinese and foreign civilians to evacuate the Chapei, Kiangwan and Yangtzepoo areas in the vicinity of Chinese military positions.

Warning was also forthcoming from the Chinese in the form of a note from Mayor O. K. Yui to the Senior Consul of the Consular Body this morning.

A translation of the full text of the note reads:

I have the honor to address you as follows:

Whereas Japanese forces wantonly initiated the attack on our defense forces, and

Whereas our troops, determined to resist the alien invasion, have been compelled to adopt measures for self defense,

I have the honor solemnly to declare to Your Honor and the consular representatives of other friendly foreign powers that, in pursuance of the established policy of our government, our troops will assume the responsibility of according adequate protection to all foreign life and property in areas under their control.

I beg, however, to call to your attention one

urgent matter, namely, our military authorities hope and request that the Settlement Authorities concerned shall immediately restrain the Japanese forces from making use of the Settlement as a base for military operations . . . Otherwise, in the event of our troops being compelled to take such self-defense measures as may be deemed necessary for reducing the danger and harm caused by Japanese armed forces in so making use of the Settlement areas, the Chinese Government will not be responsible for whatever consequence that may result therefrom.

And so the stage was set and the programs issued for the drama of the afternoon.

Shortly before 4:30 this afternoon four Chinese bombing planes appeared out of the west from the direction of Lunghua and flew down the course of the Whangpoo, greeted by a hail of anti-aircraft fire from the Japanese men-of-war in the river. Upon reaching the area of the Bund center, one plane released four bombs of which two landed in the International Settlement, one penetrating the roof and top floor of the Palace Hotel, the other glancing off the side of the Cathay Hotel to continue through the canopy covering the entrance to the Sassoon House and burst in the street.

After circling in the direction of the North Station, one of the planes was seen to cross over Nantao towards the French Concession. While over Boulevard de Montigny, two bombs were dropped from this plane to land at the junction of Avenue Edward VII and Boulevard de Montigny, the intersection of two main arteries of the French Concession. Bursting nearly in the center of the intersection, they penetrated to the main sewer line, blowing a crater approximately 30 feet in diameter and 12 feet deep and making a shambles of a busy corner.

Yet another two bombs were directed at the U.S.S. Augusta, flagship of the American Asiatic Fleet, as she was proceeding up-river to her buoys, after a fast trip from Tsingtao. It was apparent that she was mistaken for a Japanese warship, and it was indeed fortunate that the bombs missed their mark, dropping into the muddy waters of the Whangpoo River.

Bodies of the killed in all stages of disintegration lay all over the road and in heaps by the Great World Amusement Palace, covered by dirt and grime and bits of crumbled masonry. Many of the wounded had their clothes entirely blown off by the force of the concussion and laid in the street grotesque and bloody crying for assistance. The gutters literally ran blood. Burnt and wrecked automobiles with their charred inmates trapped inside stood in the roadway just as the explosion left them. Glass in buildings for blocks around was shattered by the detonation.

Coming on the heels of the Nanking Road disaster, the bombing of this intersection caused the death of over a thousand with another thousand wounded, some beyond hope of recovery. This day has already been christened "Bloody Saturday" and it has fully earned its name.

Both American and British war vessels were rushing to Shanghai today and the Second Battalion, The Royal Welsh Fusiliers, 800 strong, was announced as on the way to Shanghai from Hongkong aboard the Blue Funnel liner "Maron". During the day a landing party from the U.S.S. Sacramento was put ashore at the Riverside plant of the Shanghai Power Company to protect American interests there and ensure uninterrupted electric services for the Settlement. American, British and French forces joined the Shanghai Volunteer Corps in taking up their allotted positions in defense of the Settlement and French Concession.

Thousands of Chinese were joined by hundreds of foreigners in an exodus from the northern and eastern districts to the doubtful safety of the areas south of Soochow Creek and with refugees and sightseers jamming the streets business in Shanghai was practically suspended. The local front, however, was quiet today with the exception of intermittent rifle and machinegun fire in the Chapei area and occasional shelling in the late afternoon and evening.

Japanese military forces in the north are reported to have admitted today that they are receiving unexpectedly heavy resistance from the Chinese troops concentrated at Nankow Pass. No major battles were reported as having been fought in the north today.

August 15

No single incident of the "war" on the Shanghai front so far has been more plainly noticeable than the change of attitude and expression on the part of the foreigners in the Settlement and Concession, this morning as the full import of the tragic bombings of yesterday dawned upon them. They seemed to be going about their tasks in a daze and the main topic of conversation of the day was, "Why?" and "What next?" with no one able to supply the answers.

Interviewed by the *Shanghai Evening Post and Mercury* this morning, Mayor O. K. Yui stated that he deeply deplored the bombings of yesterday near the Great World and the Palace and Cathay Hotels. Referring to them as "accidents" (the first hint as to what direction an official explanation might take) the interview conveyed his sympathy for the killed and wounded.

Other aftermaths of the happenings of "Bloody Saturday" were protests on the part of the Consular Body and other responsible officials over the bombings and against the flight of Chinese planes over the Settlement and Concession. Mayor Yui, in reply

to a verbal protest, intimated that unless the anti-aircraft machineguns mounted on the tops of Japanese buildings along the Bund were removed, the Chinese might have to take adequate action in self-defense. The United States, following the example of Great Britain, has made the most earnest representations to both the Chinese and Japanese Governments, exhorting them not to use the Settlement as a "theatre of operations."

Meanwhile the war went right on today as the artillery fire started last night by the Japanese warships in the Whangpoo directed against the Chapei and Civic Center areas continued this morning. Japanese seaplanes bombed the Hungjao Airdrome this morning, doing a small amount of damage to the field with the hangars remaining untouched. During the afternoon, a Chinese bombing plane, apparently on reconnaissance, made several trips over the Whangpoo River through and above a barrage of anti-aircraft fire from the warships in the river.

Both the Settlement and Concession authorities announced today that commencing tonight, for the "better preservation of peace and order," a curfew would be enforced from 10:00 p.m. to 5.00 a.m. during the present crisis.

Nineteen Japanese planes raided Nanking today to give the capital city its baptism of fire. Many bombs were reported dropped within the city although the amount of destruction effected was not disclosed. The Chinese claim that three of the heavy bombers were brought down by anti-aircraft fire and Chinese pursuit planes, with another five forced to land in the Lanchi area, eastern Chekiang.

August 16

Today Shanghai was awakened by the sound of airplane motors droning overhead, a sound, it seems, which residents of this area will have to become accustomed. Six Japanese seaplanes were circling over the Concession and shortly after 6:00 a.m. bombs were dropped on the Lunghwa Airdrome and the Kiangnan Arsenal. Shortly after 8:00 a.m. two Chinese bombing planes appeared over the Whangpoo to be met, as before, with heavy anti-aircraft fire from the warships anchored below. One bomb was dropped in this raid, landing somewhere in Hongkew. And following this raid, thirteen Japanese planes circled over the city, eventually to fly off into the northwest without having dropped any bombs.

Aircraft activities of the morning were climaxed when Chinese bombers again raided the Shanghai area, dropping several bombs into south Hongkew. Casualties included six Chinese and two foreigners killed, while several Japanese officials, consular policemen, civilians, two sailors and several Chinese refugees fleeing along Broadway were injured. In an announcement following the raid, the Japanese claimed that one of the Chinese planes was shot down in Chapei.

A Chinese announcement today regarding the Japanese raids of Nanking and the province of Chekiang yesterday, claimed that, in all, fifteen Japanese planes were brought down, six near Nanking and another nine in Chekiang Province. It begins to appear, if the press releases of the two belligerents are at all accurate, that the overhead on planes and pilots in this latest Sino-Japanese incident is going to be high.

On the ground today, heavy fighting took place in Chapei as well as in the Kiangwan area with the Chinese claiming advances. Heavy shelling was noticeable with Japanese guns concentrating their fire on western Chapei.

News has arrived in Shanghai that arrangements are to be made for the evacuation of British civilians from the Shanghai area. This announcement was made by the British Foreign Office following a conference between Sir Robert Vansitart, Permanent Under-Secretary for Foreign Affairs, and a number of technical advisors.

Following the British action, it was announced after a two hour conference between Admiral Harry E. Yarnell, Commander-in-Chief of the Asiatic Fleet, Clarence E. Gauss, American Consul-General, Colonel Charles F. Price, commander of the 4th Marines, and other leading American military, naval and consular officials, that evacuation of American women, children and elderly persons according to arrangements agreed upon is to begin from tomorrow. The French Consul-General stated this afternoon that no evacuation of the Concession is contemplated unless the situation becomes more serious.

In the north, tension increased in Tsingtao with the landing of Japanese bluejackets in that holiday resort city. It was reported that a deadlock was reached in the negotiations between the civilian authorities and the Japanese Consul-General regarding the Tsingtao shooting "incident."

August 17

The Settlement and Concession, deemed havens for refugees by the thousands who evacuated Chinese-controlled areas for safety within the foreign-controlled boundaries, were themselves stripped of a good portion of their foreign population this morning as 1300 American and British evacuees left the city. The Americans sailed for Manila on the President Jefferson and the Britons left for Hongkong aboard the Rajputana.

The most spectacular bit of fighting during the past twenty-four hours occurred when a torpedo launched from a fast Chinese torpedo boat last night hit the protective steel net around the Idzumo, flagship of the Japanese fleet in these waters, and exploded with terrific force. The extent of actual damage done to the cruiser could not be learned today but in view of the distance at which the net was

placed from the warship it is belived that damage to the Idzumo is slight if any.

The war in the air continued with the Japanese antiaircraft fire, at 11:30 this morning, bringing down a Chinese bomber in the vicinity of the Naval Landing Barracks. In the late afternoon Japanese planes bombed the area around the North Station.

Added inducement was offered Chinese pilots with an announcement from Chinese sources that a cash reward of $20,000 each has been ordered by the Generalissimo Chiang Kai-shek for the aviators who have brought down Japanese planes around Hangchow in the past three days. The Generalissimo is also reported to have highly commended the Chinese air-force in Hangchow for the successful repulsing of the several air raids in that vicinity.

The Hongkew and Wayside areas were the objects of attention from Chinese bombing planes during the day and from Chinese artillery fire from Pootung. Several Japanese civilians were reported killed as a result of the shelling and the Hongkew Fire Station and the Wayside Police Station were both hit by shell fire. Both the Hongkew and the Wayside Fire Stations were ordered evacuated this morning. Meanwhile the Japanese continued the shelling of the Markham Road Railway Yards and west Chapei generally.

August 18

Major development of the day in this "war that is not a war" was a statement from Washington that 1200 marines under the command of Brigadier-General John C. Beaumont have been ordered to proceed to Shanghai from San Diego and will sail within the next ten days. The order is significant as an indication that official Washington believes that the status here is a serious one and is likely to remain so for some time. Indications to the effect that British authorities have the same apprehensions in regard to the local situation are also seen in an announcement from London that all British rights and property would be accorded the fullest measure of protection by means to be ascertained within the next few days.

Meanwhile reinforcements from adjacent stations of both Great Britain and the United States arrived today. The American destroyers Edall and Parrott arrived from Chefoo this morning as also did the U.S.S. Isobel, yacht of Admiral H. E. Yarnell. The cruiser Augusta, flagship of the Asiatic Fleet, moved up river to drop anchor opposite the Customs Jetty. Britain brought up the Ulster Rifles, 1000 strong, from Hongkong in the Empress of Asia. The French landed 200 bluejackets from the flagship Lamotte-Picquet to take stations around Siccawei Observatory and a further detachment of 300 marines crossed the Nanto boundary to protect the Waterworks. While measures for the defense of the city are being perfected, 300 more American women and children sailed at 11:00 a.m. for Manila aboard the S. S. President McKinley, going down river in the tender to board the ship at Woosung.

It was learned today that the Japanese preponderance of artillery and aircraft have taken a heavy toll of the defending Chinese forces during the past four days. Since neither side have released complete statements of casualties, an accurate accound of killed and wounded is impossible today, but it was reliably reported that about one-fourth of the effectives of the 88th Chinese Division which has been holding the Chapei-North Station area have been put out of action, chiefly by artillery fire. The 87th Division at Kiangwan has also suffered heavily from artillery fire from Woosung.

Heavy fighting was reported last night with the Chinese claiming minor advances in the Honkew area. Advances claimed by the Chinese which would place their forces about four blocks due north of Broadway opposite the China Merchants Wharf were denied by the Japanese, who stated that the fighting is still in the Dixwell Road area. Hand-to-hand conflict also featured the fighting in the Yangtzepoo distict with the Chinese claiming the capture of the navy drill ground while the Japanese, acknowledging the attacks, stated that they had successfully repulsed the Chinese forces.

Shanghai University, the Chapei Waterworks and Power Station and the Civic Center were under heavy shell fire from warships in the river and off Woosung all morning and a conflagration started by shell fire last night near the Kiangwan Race Course was still burning and visible from the Settlement.

Japanese airplanes roared over both Settlement and Concession all day. They started the day's bombing with a methodical but ineffectual bombardment of Kiangnan Arsenal and the Lunghwa Airdrome early this morning. Both objectives had previously been abandoned, the arsenal after the 1932 trouble and the airdrome yesterday, when the last two C.N.A.C. planes took off for the interior. The bombings were done by seaplanes and the technique, power dives, were spectacular. Interesting in view of the representations by foreign powers was the fact that all planes flew over both Settlement and Concession with their bombs.

Chinese today claimed to have brought down two Japanese planes during the course of the raids over Chapei. The Japanese have acknowledged the loss of one plane on this front yesterday, stating that the pilot after landing forced his way through hostile territory to the river bank where he was picked up by his comrades and taken to a warship.

August 19

A foreign eyewitness counted ten Japanese transports at Woosung this morning. Two divisons totalling at least 40,000 men are expected to try to land somewhere near Liuho and attempt to repeat their

encircling movement of 1932, forcing the Chinese troops to retire to escape annihilation. Japanese troops attempting to land near Liuho are reported to be meeting with no success due to the Chinese being strongly entrenched there. It has been definitely learned that reinforcements for the Japanese in the form of the Komorai Brigade, famous for their fighting ability, has arrived and been put ashore somewhere near Shanghai.

The Japanese Naval forces claimed a "signal success" along the eastern extremity of the Settlement this morning. Aided by reinforcements, they claim to have driven back the Chinese along a wide front, establishing the new Japanese front lines several kilometers north of Shanghai University. Other activities of the Naval Landing Party included the seisure of the China Merchants Lower Wharf in retaliation for the sinking by the Chinese of seven N.K.K. steamers. Goods stored in the warehouses were also commandeered by the Japanese, it is believed.

Mr. J. K. Choy, manager of the China Merchants, in commenting on the seizure to the *Shanghai Evening Post and Mercury* pointed out that all of the goods stored in the godowns were the property of foreign interests such as the French Mail Line and the Italian Mail.

Japanese airplanes were especially active today, making a concerted attack on Chinese positions in the northern and western areas. The Southern Baptist Mission School and the Chapei Electric Plant, already badly damaged by shellfire, were two targets singled out for especial attention by the planes which scored direct hits at both places. Lunghwa Airdrome was again bombed and a hangar was afire early in the afternoon.

It was learned today that the Chenju radio station was bombed and put out of commission yesterday when Japanese planes raided Chinese troops concentrated nearby. No lives were lost at the station but the set is definitely off the air. The Liuhong radio station was also bombed yesterday later in the afternoon and put out of commission with equipment shattered and a mast down. In the urgent situation, R.C.A. is utilizing an emergency transmitter to maintain wireless communication with the outside world. Attempts are being made now to secure the neutralization of the Shanghai, Chenju and Liuhong radio stations together with an assurance that further bombings will not occur. This morning, however, the Chenju station was again bombed, with the extent of further damage not as yet determined.

The N.K.K. lines suffered a damage of $10,000,000 when Chinese scuttled their river fleet to form a boom across the Whangpoo, according to an estimate by the Japanese naval authorities. In addition to the property losses in Hongkew, Yangtzepoo and Wayside suffered by Japanese nationals and the ignition of the M.B.K. Pootung coal reserves which are still burning, this loss of ships would indicate that civilian property losses to Japanese are also going to be high.

1,400 more Britishers, the largest group yet to evacuate, sailed down river today aboard British destroyers to board the Empress of Asia at Woosung for Hongkong. The evacuees were for the most part women and children but a few were elderly people, old China hands uprooted after a lifetime spent in China and dazed with the sudden descent of calamity. The evacuation seemed to be the best organized yet, arrangements going through smoothly in a minimum of time.

While the "war" here goes on, there is no change in the view of the British Government believing that it still can be settled peaceably, especially since both Nanking and Tokio have repeatedly professed goodwill to one another. In particular, the British Government wishes the conflict to be moved away from the Settlement and Concession and has made definite proposals to the Chinese governments to that effect. Exact details of the proposals were not revealed today but are believed by Reuters to be in essence:

(1) The mutually agreed exclusion of Japanese and Chinese military and naval forces from a zone including and surrounding Shanghai, and

(2) To give confidence to the Japanese for the safety of their nationals on the one hand, and to the Chinese against the use of the International Settlement as a military base on the other hand, the protection of the Japanese in Shanghai should be entrusted to other foreign contingents in the Settlement acting in concert.

It was announced today that Shanghai is in no danger of a shortage in supplies, food or otherwise. There are large stocks of rice and other foodstuffs in godowns readily accessible and gasoline and other necessary supplies are being landed on the Bund daily.

Today, the writer together with a staff member of the *Shanghai Evening Post and Mercury* made a visit to the Chinese lines in Chapei. The following is a reprint from the columns of the *Shanghai Evening Post & Mercury*, Friday, August 20 of this trip.

"BEHIND THE CHINESE LINES IN CHAPEI, —Aug. 19.—Hello, pilot of a Japanese twin-motored bomber! You didn't hit us. In fact, you missed us by quite a distance although you certainly dived low and let loose your machine-gun. Here we still are, sitting in a Chinese dug-out and rubbing shoulders with the soldiers.

Swerving the car through a maze of barbed-wire entanglements and sand-bags, we entered Brenan Road from Yu Yuen Road. Paradoxically, we were coming into a point which had less of a militant air than at

the International Settlement boundary. Here ricshas were still running and the residents were nonchalantly watching the passers-by.

PEACEFUL SCENE

The skies were clear, dotted with sailing clouds. The fields were green with crops and the farmers were working. It was curiously peaceful. It was just one of those mid-summer afternoons and yet a few miles from here a huge organized massacre was going on. Two formidable war machines were in full swing, ready for blood and geared to kill.

We drove out on Chungshan Road. Up to the Toyoda Cotton Mill, there was not a sign of war. There was something queer about it all, however, and that was the presence of flags. British flags, American flags but no flags of the contesting nations. From the Union Jacks and Stars and Stripes, inaudible voices seemed to be calling: "Don't Bomb!" "Don't shell!"

FIRST STOP

We could not get over the picnic feeling until we got as far as Soochow Creek. There we found a formidable sand-bag structure, manned by the Peace Preservation Corps. The sentinels were efficient and courteous. First came the arm, waving several times to stop the approaching car. Then they put their hands on their rifles—with muzzles pointed into the air rather than against your ribs—and they walked to the car. Understanding, we produced our papers. Sure they read; in fact, there are less illiterates in the army than in the civilian population in China.

The heels clicked. Grins flashed across their suntanned faces. They stretched their arms out and said "please."

"PEACE" AGAIN

Once over the bridge, the shadow of Mars again left us. The villagers were remaining and carrying on business as usual. Ricshas, bicycles and pedestrians were seen. Children played on the sidewalks. Adults carried on their toil. They all seemed to be pleased that they are no longer bothered by the dust storms caused by passing excursion cars.

Near the Li Yuen Dairy, a deep trench had been dug and motorists were told to beware. Only a wooden bridge (if it can be called a bridge) spans the communication trench. From there on for some 50 years, only the left lane of the road is open. The other section is roped off. It is apparent that it is mined. They put up the defense work when the Toyoda Mill was still in Japanese hands.

MORTARS HEARD

It was not much beyond the road leading to Chenju that we came to a grim realization that war was going on. The dull boom of trench mortars proved it. A number of trucks carefully camouflaged, were standing on the road-side, ready to move the wounded. Officers and men of the mechanized car unit of the 88th Division were sipping tea and chatting, having been relieved from the front.

"You better stop here or turn to the road to Liuho," one of them advised after establishing the identity of the visitors. "You are within two li (two-thirds of a mile). from the firing line now."

"How about taking us to the front?"

"This way."

OFF ON FOOT

Taking their advice to leave the car near the teashop in a shaded corner, we crawled out of the vehicle and set out on foot. Over us three Japanese bombers droned their way from the direction of the Japanese naval landing party barracks.

The nonchalant way in which the guide walked reassured us and we walked on as if it were Nanking Road, unperturbed by the Japanese "iron birds."

"We are making good progress," the soldier said. "We must thank our compatriots behind the lines for the fine support and encouragement given us. We want to fight the Japanese because only a war of resistance could save us . . . . . ."

SPOTTED BY PILOT

But we were talking too much. The plane above must have spotted us. ("Huh, two foreign dressed persons walking into a village, escorted by a soldier. Must be big shots!") Down zoomed the plane and out burst hot lead from the machine gun. The rat-tat-tat interrupted our conversation, and we ducked. The plane circled and circled, letting loose with its machine gun now and then. No hits, no runs and plenty of errors. We weren't big shots.

In fact, the Japanese pilot fooled us. We would not have been so nonchalant if we had known that the plane had spotted us. The planes, three in all, had passed us whereupon we assumed the "walking-on Nanking-Road air." Actually, however, one of the planes left the flight, climbed into the clouds and zoomed down on the village we had just entered on our way to the front.

LIKE CHICKS

We hate this analogy but it's the fact: We were like chicks keeping away from a hungry eagle with its sharl eyes on its intended prey. Under the roof of a fly-infested house we sought refuge. Ten minutes, 15 minutes . . . The plane was still circling over the village, hunting. We chatted with the villagers, with one eye peeled at the sky, hoping we wouldn't be seen by the observer. Sure, they like the soldiers and are willing to help them. The villagers declared that they have more than one reason to like the soldiers and that was due to the fact that their homes were once under Japanese occupation for about two months during 1932.

"All clear," the soldier said at last. It was only "all clear" for us for the Japanese planes were laying

eggs here and there, with explosions distinctly audible. Trench mortars went into action and a few more steps set us within the sound of the machine-guns although the wind was blowing in the other direction.

BE CAREFUL

"We are very near the firing line," the soldier warned us. "Be careful." The soldier himself didn't seem to be taking any precautions, however.

"Oh, that's alright with me," he said. "We are used to such stuff."

Through a maze of sandbags and dug-outs we finally got near to the front—the closest point any newspapermen are allowed to go behind the Chinese lines. To the civilian, the place was like a 10-by-10 room with a lot of Cantonese firecrackers going off outside. But when asked "what's the latest," the Chinese soidiers said: "All was quiet here."

"How about the aerial bombardments?"

"They miss us by miles." they declared. "The planes fly too high you see. Afraid of our guns. Flying too high, they miss their targets."

REACH HEADQUARTERS

Later we were on our way back. By walking along some country paths, we reached the headquarters of the—th Division. The divisional commander, we were told, was at the front, personally directing and inspecting operations. We were received by his chief adjutant.

"In our operations against the Japanese," he stated, "we are much handicapped by the demarcation of the foreign areas. We could have wiped out the enemy if it had not been for orders from the Central Government and our Commander to avoid causing damage to foreign lives and properties and to give them adequate protection."

GRATEFUL FOR SUPPORT

"We are fighting for the existence of our nation and our race. It is only by a war of resistance that Japanese aggression may be checked. We are grateful for the public support given our troops and our government in this war. Although it is our duty to defend our nation, our people have certainly backed us up with their material and moral encouragement".

He drew a brief word picture of the lines held by the Chinese forces, saying that the 88th Division is in charge of the Chapei-Yangtzepoo line and that the 87th Division is in charge of the Yangtzepoo-Liuho line.

THEY HAVE THE GUNS

"Oh, yes," he continued, "we have anti-aircraft guns with us but prefer not to use them. We are defending a wide area and it is better not to use the anti-aircraft guns to tell the Japanese which are our more important spots. For the Japanese huddled inside the narrow area in Hongkew, it is different. They have many guns mounted in the buildings around their vital spots while the Chinese air force, trying to harm as little as possible the property of friendly powers, naturally have to be very careful."

"But we are not harassed by the aerial bombardments which apparently were aimed at our gun emplacements. They are bothered by our artillery fire, you know. They have been trying to bomb our gun positions all the time but the only damage they have done is that to the dummy works. The Great War has taught us a good lesson. German ideal!"

YOU'RE SAFE

During our conversation, Japanese bombers droned above and none of the soldiers remaining visible showed any signs of excitement. We almost blushed when we realized that the officer must have observed us tuning our ears to the twin-motored bombers rather than to his statements. "You are safe," he said.

"There is no truth in the reports that we have suffered heavy losses. How could we? Yes, our soldiers are brave and often our Commanders were puzzled by the number of soldiers volunteering for 'dare-to-die' work when only a small detail was necessary. They are veterans and veterans know how to avoid unnecessary danger, you see."

AVOIDING FOREIGN AREAS

Then the officer explained that the Chinese air force, working in smooth cooperation with the land force, is still active despite the belief that they have been idle for sometime. "We are trying to avoid flying over foreign areas, in contrast to what the Japanese planes are doing despite their assurances. But our planes make their surprise appearances and bomb the Japanese positions, as they did last night."

We could see that the morale of the Chinese forces was high—both on the firing and reserve lines. They all took much pride in having participated in the defense of Shanghai—some for the second time in five years. Both the 87th and the 88th Divisions participated in the 1932 battles.

PLENTY OF FORTS

From headquarters we proceeded to Lunghwa via Chungshan Road. The entire highway is sprinkled with formidable "fortresses," apparently built when the Japanese menace at the Toyoda cotton mill was not removed. Still they were taking all necessary precautions, especially on Hungjao Road, which leads to Tung Wen College in the eastern direction and to the Hungjao Airdrome—the scene of the incident held as the immediate cause of the present fighting—in the western direction.

Along Chungshan Road, we also observed a Kompo man, aged about 50, marching with his hands bound to his back. He was caught red-handed spying for Japanese, an officer explained. Identification tags were found on his person. He should be dead today—dead for betrayal of his nation for a price of some $16 per month.

Contrary to Japanese reports, we observed no damage to the Woosung—Shanghai Garrison Headquarters in Lunghwa and to the former City Government building in Fenglingchiao, off Route Ghisi. Both of the places were reported by the Japanese sources to have been bombed Wednesday.

August 20

Foreign interests were further jeopardized today by inference of the Chinese military authorities' request of the foreign powers to move their warships at least five miles away from any Japanese warships or, if that were not advisable, to make the Japanese warships move away to a similar distance. In the event that neither request is complied with in the period of twelve hours, and it seems a foregone conclusion that both foreign and Japanese warships will stand pat, the Chinese government announces that it refuses to assume responsibility for any damage or loss of life as the result of operations which may be undertaken against the Japanese warships. That damage will be suffered by third parties is almost a certainty in view of the proximity of the Idzumo in particular.

At 12 noon today two Chinese planes dropped a bomb very close to the Idzumo from a very high altitude. Another dropped in the Yangtzepoo area and a third, apparently far off the mark, near the Pootung Waterworks. Japanese seaplanes which went up to engage the raiders were unable to approach the speed or the height of the Chinese planes and retired without having engaged the enemy.

Later in the afternoon five Chinese planes made a similarly unsuccessful attempt on the Idzumo but drew blood when they downed a Japanese seaplane over west Chapei on their return. The fight, witnessed by this writer, was thrilling in its terrible swiftness. The Chinese planes, still at a great height, passed over two Japanese seaplanes whose pilots were evidently unaware of the presence of the enemy. Suddenly one of the Chinese planes broke formation in a vertical dive on the Japanese, fired a short borst of machinegun bullets and zoomed back into the squadron—all within the space of a few seconds. As he broke formation, one of the seaplanes evidently saw him coming and immediately banked into a cloud and streaked for home. The other was not so fortunate for he was the target of the machinegunning and fell in flames without ever having a chance either to fight or run and having had no support from his comrade.

Japanese planes were again active during the day, heavily bombing Chapei around the North Station area and the Markham Road railway yards and bombing the Shanghai-Hangchow-Ningpo Railway wharves near the Kailan Administration Coal Yards. Five Japanese planes were observed flying toward Chenju and later returning and it is presumed that the radio station area there again was the object of the raid. An eyewitness reports the destruction of the Poplar Grove Dairy Farm, an American owned dairy near Tazang, this morning by aerial bombardment. Most of the animals were killed under the mistaken impression, it is believed, that they were cavalry horses. It is understood that the Japanese air force is making its headquarters on Tsungming Island in the Yangtze River. Large fires were started during the afternoon in Nantao by Japanese incendiary.

The 'major development of the fighting on the ground during the past twenty-four hours was a thrust by Chinese forces toward the Wayside Wharf which they claimed to have captured after a three hour battle around 10.00 o'clock last night. In the Hongkew, Wayside and Yangtzepoo areas the opposing troops are locked in hand-to-hand conflict today with rifle, grenade and machinegun fire creating a constant din. From an analysis of the claims made by both sides it would appear that the Chinese are driving wedges into the Japanese lines in places in an attempt to cut off the salient of the North Szechuen Road area to the Naval Landing Party's Barracks. The Japanese with a much smaller force are counter-attacking and making inroads into the Chinese lines in sectors so that the lines at present have a jagged, saw-toothed pattern. The Japanese claim generally that the lines are now so disposed that the Chinese forces are entirely outside the Settlement Boundaries, while the Chinese claim to be holding an important position in the Kashing Road district and on the whole to be holding their own against regular army troops and the Naval Landing Party. It is not likely that major gains have been registered by either side in the fighting today around Shanghai.

Meanwhile a major problem has arisen over the disposition of the prisoners in the Ward Road Jail, at present holding more prisoners than any other single penal institution in the world and holding them right in the line of fire. Chinese artillery in Pootung and Chinese trench mortars in the North Station area have already scored direct hits on the building without, however, any loss of life as yet. Criminally insane inmates have been removed to institutions south of Soochow Creek and plans are now being formulated for the removal of the rest of the prisoners. Both foreign and Chinese warders are still on duty in the institution.

A smoke-filled sky obscured Yangtzepoo from the Settlement today as four big fires along the waterfront created a screen. One of the fires appeared to be right behind Melchers Wharf, while another was slightly to the west of the Old Wharf. Two others were burning strongly to the east. The Japan-China Weaving and Spinning Mill in Pootung was burning fiercely today and shell fire from the warships in the river started a small fire in Nantao. The Japanese assert that retreating Chinese forces in the Yangtzepoo area set fire to several small houses. In any case, the whole eastern sky is obscured by a heavy haze of smoke today.

2000 residents of Shanghai departed for other ports further removed from hostilities today. 820 of them were Americans who evacuated on the S.S. President Hoover after a destroyer-escorted ride in a tender to Woosung. 400 British women and children left for Hongkong on the S.S. Patroclus and 350 British men left for the same port aboard the S.S. Maron. The British evacuees were also escorted on their way down river to Woosung by destroyers. The evacuation this morning seemed to go along on well organized plans, certainly better than those first ones which were rather hectic affairs done on the spur of the moment.

August 21

Last night a small shell hit the after-well deck of the U.S.S. Augusta and exploded during the showing of a motion picture to members of the crew assembled in the enclosure. One sailor was killed and 18 others injured by the flying splinters. Origin of the shell was not determined today although it is generally agreed that the incident was accidental and merely the chance impact of a stray shell. The incident made the headlines in all of the U.S. newspapers, some of whom were quite violent in their editorial comment. No serious action will be taken, however, by the U.S. Government, it is believed here. The keynote of the attitude of the Government was sounded, it was pointed out, in a statement by Secretary of State Hull characterizing the affair as "an unfortunate incident." The general opinion is to the effect that the commander of the Asiatic Fleet will in all probability make a strong protest to the Chinese and Japanese commands and there the matter will rest.

The first batch of American evacuees, the group which left on the President Jefferson, arrived in Manila safe from shot and shell only to be greeted by the worst earthquake that city has experienced for many a year. Power, light and telephone services were interrupted and windows smashed all over town. Coming hard on the heels of the terror experienced in Shanghai, the earth tremor unnerved many of the refugees.

The fires raging in the Yangtzepoo district were still spreading today but had reached no farther west than Chaufoong Road and no farther south than the north side of Broadway, leaving the godowns and wharves to the south untouched. All of the buildings on the north side of the road, however, have been damaged, including the Nanyang Bros. Tobacco Co.'s godown, the Commercial Storage Co., godown, the Hot Spot Cafe and several other small buildings. Buildings are burning in the area between Broadway and Seward Roads. An estimate of the area affected by the fire so far gives as its boundaries Chaufoong, Broadway, Muirhead and Seward Roads, wih several small fires being noticed even to the north of Seward Road.

In a trip through the district, fires were noticed north of the Municipal Jail on Ward Road. Approaching the waterfront to note the extent of the damage to godowns, if any, it was noticed that the Japanese Marines were in possession of the China Merchants Lower Wharf, contradicting by their presence the Chinese statement of a successful push to the river bank last night. Streets were covered with glass and debris of all kinds and several Chinese bodies were seen lying on the pavement.,

A Japanese official statement today had the Asiatic Petroleum Co.'s Works at the east end of the Settlement burning as a result of a bomb dropped by raiding Chinese airman at 8:30 a.m. Another fire was started by bombing when Japanese planes bombed and set fire to apartment buildings near the corner of Dixwell and Scott Roads.

Planes of both contending sides were again active today, a flight of six Chinese bombers and pursuit planes starting off the day's program with a raid on west Hongkew, dropping their explosives in the neighborhood of Boone Road. Japanese claim to have downed two of the raiders, one by anti-aircraft fire and the other as a result of an aerial fight. Earlier in the morning another Chinese plane was shot down over Hungjao Road railway crossing after a ten minute fight with two Japanese planes which had been bombing the region.

Early in the morning ten Chinese planes bombed the Idzumo but missed their objective. By now Shanghai is beginning to believe that the Japanese flagship bears a charmed life. The raid, however, provided a great show for observers. Winging their way in from Chapei, the ten circled above the warship anchored in midstream and then, as four planes circled above, the other six went into a series of spectacular power dives. Due to the intensive anti-aircraft fire directed at them, the raiders ended each dive while still at a considerable height and this is believed to have been the reason for the lack of hits.

A large squadron of Japanese planes, 12 in number, this afternoon were extensively bombing western Chapei. 35 bombs were dropped in an attempt to put out of commission the Chinese batteries which have incessantly shelled Chapei, but the attack was unsuccessful for this evening the Chinese batteries in this area were hard at it again throwing shells into Hongkew and Yangtzepoo.

Interviewed by the *Shanghai Evening Post and Mercury* today, was a young Chinese captain lying in the Paulun Hospital with slight wounds, who claims to be the pilot of the plane which dropped the bombs on Avenue Edward VII and on the Palace and Cathay Hotels on "Blood Saturday." He stated that his plane was just returning from the bombing of the Naval Landing Party Barracks when it was attacked from above by a Japanese plane flying at such an altitude that it was invisible to the watchers on the ground. The first burst of machine gun fire killed his observer and wounded the young captain-

pilot. From that point he was not quite sure what happened although he believes that the bullets must have damaged the bomb racks and loosened the missiles which brought death and injury to thousands. He managed to bring his plane to earth safely behind Chinese lines, however, and was rushed to a hospital.

The statement by the pilot that his plane was responsible for both tragedies on that afternoon was discredited by every eyewitness of the affair. The bombings, in the opinion of observers, were perpetrated by two different planes; one on the way down river, and the other a bit later after circling over the Barracks. Charitably the newspaper interviewers ascribed the error in the pilot's statement to a mind unbalanced by painful wounds.

Despite the pouring into North China of new troops at a high rate, the Japanese have apparently not succeeded in forcing the strategic Nankow Pass. Foreign estimations of the number of Japanese troops in North China vary from 80,000 to 100,000 and the heavy movements on railways from Taku Bar to fighting positions has seriously hampered the movement of necessary foodstuffs, causing a shortage in Tientsin. Peiping is still cut off from all communications.

August 22

Shanghai Evening Post and Mercury representatives toured Hongkew today to bring back an eyewitness account of the conflict in that area. North Szechuen Road itself was scarcely damaged, the main change from its peacetime status being the deserted and boarded-up shops and barricaded streets empty of all life save the Japanese military. A few shops in the vicinity of Soochow Creek was still burning at the corner of Haining and North Szechuen Roads. The Dixwell Apartments and the area north of Dixwell Road was extensively damaged as was also the area around Range Road, visited while returning. The Willie's Theatre in this area was badly damaged and a wrecked car stood in front of it.

The trip was necessarily hurried, due to the presence of Chinese snipers who speeded our footsteps in several cases. It is felt, however, that a fairly complete tour of Hongkew was made and the conclusion reached that damage there was not nearly as extensive as has been reported. The main point of interest in this direction to most Shanghai readers has been the effectiveness of the Chinese shellfire on the Japanese Naval Landing Party Barracks, rumored to be impervious to shells and bombs. One shell hole was shown to the writer as the only hit made on the building. It was on the east wall at the fourth floor and was three to four feet in diameter. Several buildings around the barracks had been hit, however.

Interviewed at the Landing Party headquarters, a young captain of the Japanese forces denied that there were any Japanese army troops in the Shanghai area, explaining that there were only 3000 men at the front, the rest being utilized behind the lines. The young spokesman also denied any intention on the part of Japanese gunners to destroy the beautiful new Civic Center, stating that the gun crews on Japanese warships had been ordered to spare the buildings and so avoid unnecessary destruction to their beauty.

During the interview, the captain, on being questioned about the reported landing of Japanese troops at Liuho, stated that he had no knowledge of it although he did know that the Chinese were strongly entrenched along the river banks at that point. He pointed out that the Japanese were not likely to repeat the encircling movement of 1932 but preferred to develop new plans.

Headlined today was the feat of Chinese plainclothes snipers in breaking through the Japanese lines to occupy the Shanghai and Hongkew Wharf at dawn. From that point they fired on the sailors on the Idzumo, inflicting several casualties before the landing of sailors in force from the Japanese flagship at 7.00 a.m., and point-blank shell fire caused them to retreat to the north. A fire was burning in the Jardine Matheson & Co.'s godown early in the morning, started, according to the Japanese, by the snipers in the building. This the Chinese denied, pointing out that the shells from the warship, poured in at such close range, were a far more plausible cause.

The Japanese admitted this morning that their numerically inferior forces were unable to prevent squads of snipers from penetrating their lines, although reinforcements rushed to the scene of the break always drove back the Chinese. Because of this admission and the alleged depredations to foreign property by Chinese during these raids, the suggestion has been made in the Settlement that the Japanese turn over the wharf district to the British, whose interests are most heavily involved.

Heavy fighting was reported all last night at North Station, Hongkew, Wayside and in Pootung. Intensive artillery fire was directed on the Japanese forces from several points in Chapei and Pootung, with the naval guns in the river shelling Pootung in reply. Bitter street fighting with rifle, machineguns and hand grenades went on all through the night in the Wayside district.

Isolated stray shells and shell splinters fell in areas south of the Creek during the night and early morning, injuring a total of nineteen non-combatants. Scores of fires are burning in the eastern district, with the area east of the Dixwell Road Police Station one solid wall of flame. Settlement firemen are assisting whenever possible to extinguish the fires which, although in districts under the control of the Japanese military, are still within the Settlement boundaries. The work of the Fire Brigade in fighting these fires, in many cases while being subjected to shelling, aerial bombardment and sniper's bullets, in addition to the normal hazards attendant upon a fireman's duties, is one of those feats of little-pub-

licized heroism the more laudable because of the lack of fanfare

Catching the imagination also today was the breaking of a story in the *Shanghai Evening Post and Mercury* to the effect that three attempts by S.V.C. members in armored cars have been made during the past 48 hours to evacuate a Filipino family from 623 Point Road, near Chaoufoong Road and right in the heart of fighting zone. Each time the rescuing cars were forced to turn back because of the intensity of the fire in the no-man's-land across which lay their route. Further attempts at rescue will be made immediately as the head of the family, Mr. Bagaman, is known to be seriously ill and in need of medical attention. It is believed that the other six members of the family are still safe. They are the only known people under U.S. jurisdiction left in the area.

The evacuation of the 3,500 prisoners of the Ward Road Jail was scheduled for today and the first stage was completed at 1.00 p.m. when 500 Chinese prisoners were conveyed through the British lines into Chinese territory and released. Another batch of 180 juveniles was slated to be moved out of the danger zone later in the afternoon but the buses conveying the prisoners were stopped and turned back at the Garden Road Bridge by the Japanese military. Meanwhile, further evacuation according to plans made is held up indefinitely pending a new understanding with the Japanese.

The program, as decided upon by the S.M.P., was to release all but the hardened criminals and the juveniles within Chinese territory. Hardened criminals were to be taken into custody by the Chinese authorities, probably to be transferred to one of the larger Chinese penal institutions. Juvenile criminals were to be handed over to welfare societies within the Settlement on the grounds that their liberation within Chinese lines to fend for themselves would be most inhumane. This disposition of the juveniles was objected to by the Japanese on the grounds that it violated the agreement with which they had never been more than half-heartedly in accord. The situation tonight is a stalemate.

Evacuation of civilians from Shanghai today saw 2,200 Japanese women and children with some wounded soldiers leaving for Nagasaki on the S. S. Nagasaki Maru. Late today the Shanghai Maru is scheduled to leave for the same destination with more Japanese refugees. The last group of evacuating Americans is expected to sail on August 24 on board the President Pierce for Hongkong, Manila and the United States.

In view of the Japanese air and land defense preparations in Tientsin and the movements of Japanese troops along the Grand Canal, it is deduced that Chinese regular army units in large concentrations are in the vicinity of Machang on the Tientsin-Pukow Railway, about 50 miles from Tientsin. Large numbers of Chinese plainclothesmen are known to be thrown around Tientsin and advice from the north today indicates that an impending attack has been held up mainly by the torrential rainfall of the past few days.

August 23

Disaster, bringing death and mutilation to 800 non-combatants at Shanghai's busiest shopping intersection, struck the Settlement today when a large bomb or shell tore its way through the side of the Sincere Department Store to explode, the force wrecking even the Wing On Department Store across the street and making a bloody shambles of the whole immediate area. Coming as it did, after an interval of little more than a week since "Bloody Saturday"—a short breathing spell during which Shanghai had barely begun to regain its composure—this latest tragedy has again cast a spell of numbed horror over the city and business is almost at a standstill.

The writer was on the scene of the Sincere tragedy before the ambulance details and before the strong-stomached volunteer helpers—a minute or two after the explosion. A busy, noisy corner had been transferred in an instant to quiet, utter desolation; a private hell, as it were, broken only by the sound of rushing water from the broken mains on the first floor of Sincere's. The dead and wounded outside the stores had been blown across the street away from the impact of the bomb so that they lay in stacks like broken bags of grain against the concrete wall of the Wing On Store on the south side of the street, leaving the roadway itself clear of bodies save for a scattered heap here and there. The force of the concussion and the tremendous sound—perhaps a paralysis of nerve centers—seemed to have stricken the survivors dumb so that even the most terribly and painfully injured merely struggled to move and attract attention mutely.

Above this parapet of wounded and dead the display windows were shattered and children's toys lay all around the bodies, broken too, in a revoltingly horrible heap. The interiors of the two stores were filled with dead and wounded shoppers and clerks, caught at the stairs, and in the lifts. A dead Sikh policeman on point duty in the traffic tower in the center of the intersection lay draped over the side of his post. The tower itself, a heavy steel structure, was riddled with holes from flying bomb splinters. All the glass in the buildings seemed blown out on the street in small fragments, together with other debris. On the Sincere side of Nanking Road, a broken water main on the first floor level caused water to flood the floor on which were bodies of dead and injured and the bloody water streamed over the building to mingle with perfume from a broken display window and create a stench that was utterly unbearable.

Deaths were placed by the authorities at 300, including at least one foreigner, Claus Eckert, a German boy who was to have left for Germany tomorrow.

Several foreigners were among the 500 injured, among them a Swiss, Alfred U. Brunner, who is in a critical condition, and Anthony Billingham, Shanghai correspondent for the New York Times. Mr. Billingham's injuries are serious but he is not believed to be fatally hurt. Most of the injured are mangled so horribly that little hope is held out for their recovery.

Both department store buildings were badly wrecked and large stocks of valuable merchandize were ruined. Luckily, no fire started to add to the horrors. A bus of the China General Omnibus Co., a double-decker, was parked a half block away from the explosion to discharge passengers and was holed by flying bomb splinters, injuring some of the passengers. The driver had the presence of mind enough to drive away immediately, stopping out of the danger zone to secure aid. Trolley wires were down, stopping all trams in the central and western districts. Both the Wing On and Sincere Cos. had just reopened after having been closed a week because of local conditions. Both stores are owned by Australian Chinese and were flying British flags.

The Fire Brigade, both volunteers and regulars, on ambulance details, accomplished miracles in clearing the streets and buildings of dead and injured. Their cleanup squads had the streets swept clean and hosed down an hour after the tragedy. Police maintained all the order possible under the circumstances. Hospitals admitted far more than their capacity of inmates and worked all night to alleviate the suffering. Shanghai is becoming accustomed to the mechanical requirements of disaster.

At almost the same instant the missile struck Sincere's, another fell into a godown occupied by the U.S. Navy Purchasing Department behind the Hamilton House. After tearing its way through three floors, it broke up in a room stored with bags of rice without exploding. Fragments of this projectile were picked up and the whole reconstructed to form an aerial bomb 15 inches in diameter. Military experts believe that both projectiles came from the same plane and were of the same size, pointing out that if the bomb striking the godown had exploded in the confined place in which it struck, property damage and, in all probability, loss of life, would have been terrific. The Hamilton House, a new reinforced concrete structure housing many of the offices of the largest business houses in Shanghai together with apartments occupied by some of the most prominent taipans in the city, would most certainly have been wrecked, as would also many godowns in which is stored much valuable merchandize.

Origin of the projectiles is of course open to question with a strong possibility that they were dropped from a low-wing silver-colored monoplane observed to be flying at a great height directly over the two bombings during the time in question.

All other news of the "war" was shunted aside today in favor of detailed reports of the Settlement bombing and almost overlooked was the fact that the heaviest fighting of the conflict so far took place this afternoon along the Pootung coast from Woosung to Chapoo. Reports have the Japanese attempting to land in force with a large concentration of Chinese troops entrenched and defending their coastline, but these reports have not as yet been verified. Strong artillery fire exchanged between Japanese naval vessels and Pootung batteries all through the day presaged some major activity in the region. The Japanese claim to have landed 50,000 troops north of the mouth of the Whangpoo with a loss of but 29 men, while in the course of the operation they state that the Chinese losses were heavy, one entire battalion being wiped out. Chinese reports on the landing admit that the Japanese landed troops but went on to state that the troops were unable to secure a foothold on shore and were driven off after suffering many casualties.

Many fires were burning in the northern and eastern areas today, none however as strongly as those which burnt out the Broadway district previously. Settlement firemen were called out three times to extinguish one fire, the Hongkew Hotel. Each time they did their job while under fire from snipers and did it well, but in some curious manner the hotel would again be burning in a short time.

Planes were again active, 17 bombers from the Japanese base on Tsungming Island were circling over the city during the morning, evidently observing, as few bombs were dropped. Pootung was bombed by the Japanese early in the morning. No Chinese planes made any raids during the day although one was sighted shortly after noon being at a great height over the Settlement.

Renewal of evacuation measures for the prisoners of the Ward Road Jail has not progressed beyond the point at which they were stopped yesterday by the Japanese. Apprehension is felt in the Settlement for the safety of the prisoners no less than that of the members of the police who are standing by their post in "no-man's land" pending further orders.

On the whole, other than the Sincere disaster, the day passed quietly with no serious fighting adjacent to the Settlement and no major gains or losses in this area.

August 24

Headlined today in all of the newspapers was the bombing by a Japanese airplane of the Nantungchow Christian Hospital in Tungchow, opposite Woosung, on August 17, news of which has just been received in telegraphic form by the local American Consulate. There were 60 patients in the hospital at the time and 45 staff members, including two American nurses, but the meager details furnished in the

telegram did not state the number of casualties. The Americans were reported safe.

Japanese army units are still attempting to force a landing in the neighborhood of Woosung, according to Chinese reports, which added that the small detachments succeeding in reaching shore are being systematically wiped out by the Chinese army. Japanese army spokesmen reiterate, however, that troops "in excess of 50,000" have landed and are driving the Chinese back along a wide front.

Artillery of both sides was again active today, the Idzumo in particular loosening heavy broadsides during the day at Pootung and Kiangwan from her anchorage off Yangtzepoo. A huge fire at least an eighth of a mile in length was plainly visible from the Bund, the burning of the N. K. K. godowns on the Pootung side, believed to have been started by the shellfire.

The fires burning in the Hongkew, Wayside and Yangtzepoo areas appear to find new fuel as they burn out in one area. Kashing Road at the Boundary, Chinese houses near the Nanyang Bros. Tobacco Co.'s godown, and the area near Liddel's Godown on Yangtzepoo Road, were in flames last night. Several other fires were noted in the vicinity of the Hongkew Police Station, Ward Road Jail and the Nantao Bund.

Japanese airplanes bombed the Kiangnan Arsenal in Nantao shortly after noon, apparently not bothered in the least by the light anti-aircraft fire directed against them. The routine daily bombings of west Chapei were carried out today as usual. Bombings of the area around the North Station have damaged buildings in that area extensively, with the chief sufferers the houses along Boundary Road from North Shangsi Road to Cunningham Road.

With exception of the Woosung front, from which reports come in so conflicting as to puzzle observers anyway, the war in this vicinity as far as ground fighting is concerned took a breathing spell today after the heavy fighting of the past week. No advances or losses are claimed or disclaimed by either side and Shanghai gained a much needed respite after the shock of yesterday's catastrophe.

Evacuation of Shanghai progressed another step when 212 Americans sailed from Woosung aboard the S. S. President Pierce for Hongkong and Manila. The embarkation was accomplished smoothly and but a handful was at the tender to bid the evacuees farewell. 400 German nationals left at noon on the S. S. Gneisenau for the southern ports, a few planning to continue on the ship to Germany. Tomorrow morning, the Empress of Canada is expected to sail with more evacuees of all nationalities and three more Dollar ships are due before August 31.

The prisoners and warders are still in Ward Road Jail as negotiations between Settlement officials and the Japanese for their removal have yet not born fruit. Several shells have struck the buildings and some of the inmates have been killed and wounded. Fires are creeping all around the compound and fighting continues, with the Jail in the center of no-man's-land. Reports insist that the Japanese are willing to resume discussion of plans for evacuation, but meanwhile, the prisoners and their guards have not been moved.

News today in Shanghai of the outports has Nanking again bombed last night, the objective being the military airdromes. Heavy anti-aircraft fire greeted the raiders who, however, accomplished their mission and returned safely, according to a Japanese statement.

Tientsin has heard the heavy booming of guns since Sunday with no knowledge as to the nature and location of the conflict. It is believed that the battle is at Tulin, where the Grand Canal touches the Tientsin-Pukow Railway, some 15 miles from Tientsin.

Great Britain, meanwhile, has received no answer as yet to her suggestion made for the restoration of the situation around this city. Official quarters in London believe that, while Nanking is favorable to the plan, Tokyo looks upon it unfavorably, and that nothing will come of it all.

August 25

The writer witnessed an advance by the Japanese forces from their line at Ward Road northward this afternoon. They have claimed their forces were at the Settlement Boundary but from observation it is certain that they have had only outposts north of their fundamental line at Ward Road. A drive out deserted Yangtzepoo disclosed the fact that Shanghai University is clearly within the Japanese lines as claimed.

Under cover of a heavy artillery barrage laid down by their warships last night, the Japanese attempted a landing at Nanwei in Pootung. 1,000 soldiers succeeded in reaching the beach and getting a short distance inland before ruinous machinegun fire from the Chinese and artillery pounding their rear made their position untenable.

The Chinese reiterate that Japanese attempts to effect a landing at Woosung have proven unsuccessful. They claim the complete annihilation of a large detachment of Japanese troops yesterday and place Japanese losses since landing operations there began at more than 5,000. On the other hand, Japanese claim that landings at Woosung were effected in excess of 50,000 with infinitesimal losses and that advances along all fronts in the Woosung area have been made. Press representatives are beginning to realize that it is impossible to obtain accurate information from either Chinese or Japanese spokesmen and have resorted to the expedient of printing both versions and letting the public take its choice.

Japanese bombers concentrated on the deserted and empty Kiangnan Arsenal again today, scoring several direct hits and starting a fire in buildings in that area which threw up a great cloud of smoke all

over the Nantao and Whangpoo district. Other Japanese airmen were more successful in inflicting serious damage on the Chinese when they brought down two planes today. One was shot down over Hongkew at 4:25 p.m. and fell into the Japanese School on Range Road. The other was brought down after a vicious dog-fight over the Hungjao district between three Chinese bombers and two Japanese pursuit planes. It fell in flames. Chinese bombers are reported to have dropped bombs into the Ward Road and Hongkew districts shortly after midnight last night, starting new fires.

Chinese artillery was again very active last night and today, guns in the vicinity of the North Station shelling the Wayside and Hongkew districts. Pootung batteries also shelled Hongkew. Japanese warships in the river replied, shelling Pootung, Chapei, the North Station area and Kiangwan. Street fighting of the bitterest sort has been going on all through the night and day in the eastern district.

A Japanese Naval spokesman warned Consulate Officials of all Powers represented in Shanghai that alleged uses of foreign flags by Chinese military to protect buildings, housing snipers, must be stopped. He also alleged that the Chinese were using the Swastika and Red Cross flags on trucks carrying military supplies. The spokesman warned that action might be taken against buildings flying neutral flags if the abuse of this privilege was not stopped.

Furthermore, the spokesman warned that artillery fire from Pootung, which has already claimed many civilian lives, must be stopped or else the Japanese would take action to drive the Chinese out of Pootung. In this case, should the Chinese retreat into Nantao, the Japanese would have no choice but to bomb Nantao, taking due care, however, not to injure lives or property in the French Concession.

Japanese claim to have made their first raid into Shansi today, bombing army barracks and the railway station at Tatung on the Peiping-Suiyuan line. Also bombed in Shansi were army positions about three kilometers west of Kalgan. The Chinese in this locality are reported to be retreating rapidly.

Heavy fighting has broken out in Chinghai, south of Tientsin, today after the end of a long spell of heavy rainfall which made troop movements impossible. The Japanese are believed to be attempting to take full control of the strategic Tientsin-Pukow Railway, while the Chinese forces moved up heavy reinforcements in opposition. Chinese have also concentrated eastward from the Peiping-Hankow Railway on the banks of the Yungting River with the object of preventing a Japanese crossing. The battles in the north are said to present remarkable scenes as men, supplies and animals are moved through veritable quagmires of mud.

August 26

The Sino-Japanese "undeclared war" claimed an important victim today when the British Ambassador to China, Sir Hughe Knatchbull-Hugessen, was machine-gunned by a Japanese airplane as he was en route from Nanking to Shanghai in a motorcar. He is at present in the Country Hospital in Shanghai with a bullet wound on the right side of the stomach, with his condition stated to be serious. Other members of the party, Mr. E. H. Hall-Patch, British financial expert, Lieut-Colonel W. A. Lovatt-Fraser and a Chinese chauffeur, were not injured.

The motoring party was about 50 miles from Shanghai when two planes appeared and dived on the car, their machineguns spraying bullets. Sir Hughe was hit immediately. The car was stopped and the occupants got out and got under cover in the surrounding fields. Two bombs were then dropped by the planes, landing in a field near the party. One was a dud but the other threw both Lieut.-Colonel Lovatt-Fraser and Mr. Hall-Patch off their feet and showered them with debris. The car was driven to Shanghai and Sir Hughe admitted to the hospital at about 5.00 p.m.

The car in which the party was travelling was carrying a large Union Jack prominently displayed on its radiator, easily discernable from the air. Neither British nor Japanese Consular Officials wish to comment on the affair tonight without a fuller investigation.

Chinese reports today featured the bloody battle raging around Lotien. Under a terrific artillery barrage since 3.00 p.m. yesterday and after withstanding the most determined assaults-in-force of the Japanese landed forces, the Chinese army, it is stated, has succeeded in driving the Japanese out of the village of Lotien. The battle is now to the north of the village where the Japanese are attempting to hold their ground against the numerically superior Chinese forces. Lotien itself is said to be badly damaged as a result of Japanese shelling. The Japanese, in referring to Lotien, confined themselves to a statement that the situation there as far as their forces were concerned was "very satisfactory." By the mere mention of a battle, the Chinese have tacitly admitted a successful landing of Japanese troops in that area, a fact strongly denied until now.

A party of Japanese is stated to have landed in Pootung yesterday only to be surrounded by Chinese at Chuansha and annihilated. Other landings of Japanese troops, admitted today, were small detachments near Lotien to meet the Chinese reinforcements in that region.

For the first time since the commencement of hostilities, a party of newspapermen was taken on a tour of the Japanese lines in the eastern district. Characterizing the eastern district as peaceful now for the first time, an officer, giving an interview to the party in the Eastern Primary School, Pingliang Road, 2,000 yards away from the Chinese lines, stated that snipers had been entirely cleared from the area. The object of the Naval Landing party now, accord-

ing to the officer in command of the forces in the eastern area, is to affect a junction with the troops pressing toward Shanghai from Woosung "within the nearest future." Japanese front lines visited by the party were strung out between the river and the Woosung military highway, about 100 yards beyond the campus of the Shanghai University. Most of the windows of the university were broken but none of the residences of the faculty members appeared to have suffered damage. The American professors and about 100 Chinese staff members who desired to leave, had been escorted in trucks by the Japanese to the French Concession.

Aerial activity was light today. However, Chinese planes made a spectacular night raid on the Japanese warships at Woosung at about 2.00 a.m. Damage to the Japanese ships is unknown but believed to be light, if any, as no claims were made by the Chinese. All the attacking planes escaped the anti-aircraft fire and returned safely. The Japanese claim to have downed three Chinese planes on the Lotien front yesterday and three Martin bombers around Shanghai, one of which is stated to have crashed at Hungjao and the other two just outside the city.

A correspondent of the *Shanghai Evening Post and Mercury* visited the Ward Road Jail today and found the staff standing up well at the end of their second week under fire, 10 prisoners have been killed and more than 70 injured as a result of the shrapnel and flying shell splinters in the compound. 12 shells of various sizes, countless rifles, grenades and hundreds of rifle and machinegun bullets have so far hit the buildings or fallen into the compound during the course of the hostilities. The walls are spattered with bullet and shrapnel marks.

The staff and inmates are bearing up well under the strain, according to the visitors, although no large grouping of prisoners is allowed because of the danger of riots. All prisoners have been removed from the upper cell blocks to lower cells, since upper floors are more vulnerable to shells and bombs, this precaution saving many lives. The entire buildings have been sandbagged and the staff sleeps within the compound as it is cut off from the residence outside. Medical attention is furnished by a doctor and a foreign nurse who volunteered to stay behind for the job. No progress, meanwhile, has been made in the negotiations between Settlement officials and the Japanese for the further evacuation of the prisoners and the men are simply holding out as best they can hoping for the best.

The sole American family caught in the zone of hostilities, the Bagamans, subject of several rescue attempts on the part of S.V.C. members in armored cars, arrived safely south of the Creek, after a journey as arduous as it was dangerous. All were safe and sound with the exception of the father, who was ill the whole of the time the battles raged around the house on Point Road and who is now in a serious condition in the Country Hospital.

Chinese troops in the area of the Bagaman's house had moved the family out of the lines to the Medhurst College, a place of comparative safety and supplied them with food. After three days at this place, the family, on the advice of the Chinese military, began a trek to the Settlement through the Japanese lines. They walked for four hours, carrying the father, before reaching the Settlement.

Japanese advice from the north claims a major victory in Chahar as a result of a battle lasting from the morning of August 24 through to the afternoon of August 25. The dispatch details the defeat and routing of the Chinese 68th Division by a detachment of Japanese-Mongolian troops aided by artillery and planes at Shuilukoo, near Kalgan. Chinese losses were placed at 600 and those of the Japanese at 40. Citing other successes in the Peiping-Tientsin area, the dispatch claims that the Chinese are now bottled up in the strategic Nankow Pass.

A report received late in the afternoon lists the casualties of the Japanese bombing of the Nantungchow Christian Hospital in Tungchow on August 17, meagre details of which had been previously received in a wire from the American nurses there. 40 are stated to be dead, including doctors, nurses and patients, but the American members of the staff are stated to be all safe.

August 27

After a restless night, Sir Hughe Knatchbull-Hugessen, British Ambassador, machinegunned by a Japanese plane yesterday, spent a much quieter morning and his doctors issued a bulletin this afternoon to the effect that his condition was satisfactory. Meanwhile, Japanese officialdom, while directing Ambassador Kawogoe to the bedside of the injured man to tender the sympathies and regrets of the Tokyo Government, at the same time expressed doubts that the offending pilot and plane had been Japanese. Japanese Embassy officials also pointed out that the car conveying Sir Hughe and his party displayed only a small Union Jack from the radiator and, furthermore, that the Japanese authorities had not been advised of the proposed journey. Should an investigation reveal that a Japanese airman was responsible for the attack, however, the Embassy officials promised to take adequate steps to bring the incident to an amicable conclusion.

Other foreign complications were seen today in the move by the State Department at Washington and the British Foreign Office to obtain full details of the reported Japanese blockade of the China coast. Neither country has been officially notified of the existence of a blockade but competent observers believe that if the blockade is effected it would cause immediate invocation of the Neutrality Act by the United States. Great Britain is not believed to be

contemplating any steps in this matter unless Japan should claim the right to stop and search British ships, and there has been, so far, no intimation of her so doing. The Chinese Ambassador in London, Dr. Quo Tai-chi, characterized the reported blockade as another evidence of the fact that Japan wanted to subjugate China by a great offensive war.

Eight Indian staff members of the Ward Road jail were wounded at four o'clock this morning when a six pound shell tore through a corner of the hospital and burst in the dormitory. Although the Chinese have drawn back from their lines in the vicinity of the jail, the institution is no safer now than before, for the number of stray shells is almost as great as the number more accurately fired. A visit to the jail by a staff member of the *Shanghai Evening Post and Mercury*, this morning, disclosed a far greater amount of damage to the surrounding area than was seen on a similar visit two days ago. Shelling and burning had almost completely gutted large portions of Chusan and Ward Roads and charred bodies still lay in the ruins.

Japanese forces around Paoshan and Lotien, whose landing was previously denied, were reported dislodged by the Chinese last night at 7.00 p.m. after a 30 hour battle, described as the fiercest of all fought so far on the Shanghai front. Chinese troops are reported to be nearing the Lion Forest Forts in their pursuit of the retreating remnants of the Japanese forces, while the majority of the Japanese unit is stated to be dead, wounded, drowned, or to have retired to their transports. Kating and Lotien are reported to have suffered heavily from Japanese artillery fire and aerial bombardment during the course of the battle.

The Wing On Mill at Woosung, still flying the American flag as a result of a mortgage held on the property by Anderson Meyer & Co., an American concern in Shanghai, is again reported to be sheltering Chinese trench mortar units and machineguns after the protests made on this score previously, and the Japanese again threaten to use any strong measures which they may consider necessary to dislodge them. Chinese authorities deny the presence of any of their troops in the buildings.

The Japanese military today categorically denied the reports of Chinese victories on the Lotien-Kating front, asserting that Japanese units, after successfully landing, have never retreated. The two strategically important towns are still in the hands of the Japanese army, according to this statement. A Chinese press release today, while denying the success of the attempted flanking movement by the Japanese from the Yangtze bank, admitted a withdrawal from positions in Hongkew to straighten their lines.

Last night around midnight, Chinese airplanes, four times, raided the Hongkew, Wayside and Yangtzepoo districts. Another raid by Chinese planes on Japanese warships and positions around Woosung was reported to have occurred in the early hours of the morning.

Three Japanese seaplanes bombed machinegun positions in Pootung from 8.00 a.m. to 9.00 a.m. today and then the day, as far as aerial activity was concerned, passed quietly until 4.00 p.m. when a dramatic dog fight between Chinese and Japanese planes took place over the Yangtzepoo district. Four Japanese planes took part in the fight and at least two Chinese planes opposed them. It all ended suddenly when one of the Japanese planes was shot down in flames and all the other planes retired. The fight was plainly visible from the Bund.

A foreign correspondent today found the Japanese lines southwest of Peiping to extend in a line from Nankow, Changhsintien to Tientsin, "forming a strategic front guarding the Peiping-Tientsin area from Chinese attacks from the north, west and south."

20,000 Inner Mongolian troops are reported to have contributed to a Japanese victory at Nankow Pass, according to a report from Mukden. Japanese quarters admitted that this cooperation between Inner Monogolians and Japanese troops against the Chinese was, "a prelude to Japanese support of the Inner-Mongolia defense movement and the establishment of a Mongol state, styled "Mongokuo."

August 28

Ghastly were the scenes in the South Station district of Nantao at 2.00 p.m. today when bombs dropped by a squadron of Japanese planes rained death and brought mutilation to hundreds of helpless Chinese civilians. First reports of the horror read by Shanghai citizens today in the last edition of the *Shanghai Evening Post and Mercury* labeled the afternoon's work of the Japanese as "mass slaughter." While first reports had the casualty list much higher, a late check brought the list of dead down to 120 and the wounded to 400.

The raiding fleet of eight planes dropped five bombs in all, the first two striking the elevated platform directly over the waiting platform and scattering bodies all over the area. One bomb fell into the thickly populated San Kuan district, inhabited by hundreds of poor-class Chinese. Loh Ka Poong Road and Arsenal Road were the targets of the fourth and fifth bombs, both taking a heavy toll of the crowded streets.

The destruction wrought by the bombs at this place was particularly deplorable in view of the fact that most of the dead and injured were refugees who were awaiting the arrival of the late 1:30 p.m. train which was to take them out of the fighting zones to the peace and quiet of the countryside. Their packaged belongings, all they could save from their homes in the fighting zones, were strewn indiscriminately over mangled bodies.

The Nantao ambulances arrived late and few policemen were on the scene to maintain order. No

Chinese soldiers were seen about or among the victims. Heroes of the day were the Chinese Boy and Girl Scouts who rendered valuable help in clearing up the mess. Firemen were engaged in putting out various fires which had started, igniting parked cars and sundry cargoes.

The gates to the Concession were jammed with refugees from Nantao attempting to get the protection of the French after the disaster, necessitating the use of clubs and batons to beat back the frantic crowds. Only a few were allowed to enter the one open gate at Rue de la Porte du Nord and those were the drivers and coolies of incoming trucks.

A Japanese spokesman stated this afternoon that the bombing of the station was done as a result of the continued arrival of Chinese soldiers at that point. He further stated that the increase in the number of Chinese troops in Nantao might necessitate the bombing of the whole area.

An orderly withdrawal by the Chinese from their positions around Woosung, Liuho and Lotien to a prepared secondary line of defense, stretching from a point on the Yangtze just west of Liuho, south and east to Nanziang and thence along the railway to the western boundary of Shanghai, is believed to be in progress and the news headlines the military activities of the day. The move is designed to prevent the bottling up of the Chinese troops in the Woosung peninsula. The Chinese state that the new line of defense is virtually impregnable.

Evacuees on the tender going out to the S.S. President Lincoln witnessed bitter fighting in the vicinity of the Quarantine Station involving a Japanese picket boat and Chinese on the shore at 12:20 p.m. today. The passengers were forced to take cover as bullets zipped about before the boat proceeded down river to give its attention to Woosung Village.

After desultory shelling early this morning, Japanese warships started to shell the Pootung shore in earnest about 9.00 a.m. in retaliation, it is throught, for the downing of a Japanese bomber by Chinese anti-aircraft fire earlier in the morning. Shelling of west Chapei was observed this morning for an hour between 8.00 a.m. and 9.00 a.m.

All the destruction of this "incident" was deplored by Madame Chiang Kai-shek in an interview yesterday which was released for publication today. Her statement, as released in the *Shanghai Evening Post and Mercury*, is here given, verbatim:—

"Because the Chinese people have done no more than endeavor to live their own lives in peace and transform the chaotic aftermath of revolution into unified order and progress, they are being slaughtered wherever frenzied Japanese can get at them."

"The terrible ruthlessness of the onslaughts being made in various points of China, where the Japanese army and navy seek to secure dominance, is exemplified in the monstrous destruction of life and property proceeding in Shanghai which is horrifying the whole world . . . At Nanking last night and other nights, I witnessed deathdealing bombs pouring from moonlit skies and, after visiting places where 34 bombs were dropped, I left for the Shanghai front to find the air filled with diabolical wrath and the earth belching fire and being sprayed with blood of humans and deeply draped with the ashes of holocausted homes," she continued . . . "Japan denies the poor people of China the right to live even the hard lives that are theirs and moreover, she bitterly resents China assuming the status of a unified nation or an economically organized and sound one...Progress in China isn't only an anathema to her but the thought of it enrages her to fury."

"When Japan tells the world she only wants economic cooperation in China, she means only economic domination. She intends to get it under the guise of alleged offenses to her dignity or of our breaking so-called agreement which do not exist or which Japan forced upon local authorities. She expects our nation to be enslaved by them and any steps she can take to bolster her claim for justification of armed invasion, she seizes. While the world gazed on the spectacle, she recently assembled a great fleet in the Whangpoo river which is the harbor of Shanghai, cleared them for action and, when an excuse was considered ample, used them under the shelter of foreign men-of-war to cannonade hundreds and thousands of innocent Chinese out of their homes and cause the flight of thousands of foreigners from their peaceful pursuits in the adjoining part of the International Settlement."

"What is more significant is that the Settlement authorities must have known, or must confess to strange remissness, that Japan has been busy since 1932 erecting in various places of Hongkew reinforced concrete pillboxes of prodigious strength and depth from which Japanese soldiers are now machinegunning Chinese forces which sprang to the defense of their country when the invaders began their onslaught."

"For years, these preparations have been going on for the very struggle now proceeding. Japan has thus given abundant proof and more of her intentions and her sinister design to use the International Settlement as a base for war operations against China is revealed. So there should be no difficulty understanding all that's happened to their peoples, property and interests."

"China is fighting on her own soil for the defense of her hearths, homes and her honor just as any self-respecting nation has the right and duty to do; and she's not afraid. Japan may be organized as a fighting machine, but China has found her soul and will defend her people and her rights. Japan has contemptuous-

ly torn up treaties and she has treated with scathing disdain, international obligations and opinions and so acted as to cause some people to think that China, to save their trouble and loss, should concede Japan's right to undermine China's whole national fabric by creating alleged autonomous regions, with puppet heads, and be content to follow the dictates of unscrupulous and ruthless Japanese army leaders, at the same time handing over her natural resources and economic potentialities for Japan to exploit for her own purposes."

"This is the proposition to which no people with national pretensions would for one moment subscribe. China has conceded so much in the past that she has suffered and been insulted. She has accepted much humiliation, even enduring the violent rape of Manchuria to the wonderment of the world, only because she wished to put her own house in order and effect national unity, peace and prosperity which surely would be participated in by the whole world.

"The wonderful strides she was making to this end were, however, too much for Japanese army leaders who saw in an organized China the frustration of their long cherished ambition to erect at China's expense a continental empire from which she can defy the world. They struck now because they deemed the time propitious and soon might be too late. Japanese claims that China broke agreements and therefore must be punished by force are as false as Japan's wanton violation of any international treaty to serve her ends is true. Her brazen effort to convince those who wish to believe it that she's fighting communism is as specious as it is unfounded. But, now that she's been startled to find that the people of China will assert their manhood and fight, she much needs assistance and expects to be able to lure certain other nations to her aid to break this country so that she can despoil it for her own purpose."

"Again I say China may suffer but she is not afraid, feeling that what Japan is doing is against the law both of God and nature and if justice has disappeared from practical politics, if signatories of solemn treaties can calmly contemplate war being inflicted upon innocent weak people without protest or restraint, retribution still will somehow, surely, come in time to those who inflict the evil that's now vomiting death and destruction widespread about this land."

"I scorn to say anything about the amazing sacrifice of the sanctity of treaties in which the world acquiesces but I do say that, if such a thing can be, then it is supreme folly for any power in the future to sign treaties or agreements and expect that undertakings will be fulfilled if it suits an aggressive minded power to violate them."

"To the people of America I say that China will do her best to save herself and uphold her honor. She will try to endure, no matter how long it takes, till she has vindicated herself and saved the land of her ancestors from despoilers. She knows the sacrifices she'll be called upon to make but she must fight to save herself from slavery and for the sake of the poor souls who have been and will be mercilessly done to death. China knows only too well the horrors that confront her and the suffering ahead but China is unafraid."

August 29

On the local front, a fierce engagement raged for a short time last night when Japanese troops launched an attack into Chapei from Paoshan Road. They were greeted by shell fire from Chinese batteries in Chapei and by rifle and machinegun fire from the soldiers behind the sandbag barricades and the attack failed to gain ground.

In the face of Chinese denials, the Japanese still claim possession of Lotien. Most foreign observers in Shanghai believe that the Chinese have retired to a second line of defense but this the Chinese deny, stating that Chinese and Japanese troops are entrenched north of the town. A Japanese claim that their army units have effected a junction with the units of the Naval Landing Party north of Shanghai University is discounted, however, since a large number of Chinese troops is known to be in that area.

Hongkew, Wayside and Yangtzepoo districts were shelled again last night by Chinese batteries, and the usual air raids took place around midnight. Japanese shells were falling in Chapei and Pootung also last night, with the shelling of Pootung being especially heavy. A large fire was started between the North Station and Markham Road about midnight by the artillery fire.

Three Japanese planes bombed the North Station at 12:30 this afternoon. Six bombs were dropped and fires were burning in the area following the raid. Later in the afternoon, four Japanese planes bombed in the vicinity of Lunghwa, using exceptionally heavy bombs for the purpose.

All cable lines to America and Europe were broken yesterday as a side-play to the hostilities in the Woosung-Paoshan area. Repairs must await a lull in the fighting and in the interim the Chinese Government Radio Administration is assuming the job of carrying on communication until the breaks are mended.

While Sir Hughe Knatchbull-Hugessen is resting easily and is expected to be up and around in five or six weeks, the British Government has presented a note to Japan regarding the incident in which the British Ambassador was wounded by Japanese machinegun bullets. Official London is reported to be amazed at the "effrontery" of the Japanese in sug-

gesting that the Ambassador should have requested permission from the Japanese before embarking on his journey in a country toward which both Britain and Japan evince friendly feeling.

Chinese troops were threatening Japanese-held Tientsin today, according to Chinese reports received here. The Japanese motorized armies, held back by mud, are stated to have lost heavily in the battles being fought there. The Chinese also claim to be still holding Nankow Pass. In Peiping, strict censorship enforced by the Japanese is said to be inflicting hardships on the populace. Over 1,000, mostly students, have been arrested. All of the Chinese newspapers have been seized and those still publishing are doing so under the strict supervision of the Japanese, publishing only news favorable to them.

August 30

Big news of the day was the admission of the official Japanese spokesman that units of the Communist army, which have been asserted to have swung over to the support of the Central Government, have been engaged in battle by Japanese forces north of Peiping. The troops bore the insignia "North China People's Anti-Japanese Do-or-Die Corps." Also admitted by the spokesman was the retention by Chinese forces of Woosung Villages and the Woosung Forts.

The same spokesman announced that air raids had been made yesterday at Hangchow, Kiangwan, Miaohochen and north Chapei, with damage to the air fields and hangars at Hangchow extensive. In his statement, the spokesman said. "The Japanese will refrain from attacking Chinese civilians at the present time," and clarified that by saying that the presence of civilians near military objectives might make the shelling and bombing of such civilians necessary. Such was the condition at the South Station, according to this spokesman, who said that the Japanese had "accurate information" that many Chinese soldiers had lost their lives in that bombing. This writer having personally viewed the South Station while the smoke of the explosion was still in the air and having made a close inspection of the entire area, failed to see one Chinese soldier dead or alive anywhere about.

The fronts were comparatively quiet today, the outstanding activity to observers being the shelling of Chapei in the vicinity of the North Station at 4:00 p.m. and the Chinese shelling of the area of the Hongkew Rifle Range. Fires were observed near Yochow, Liping, Hailar and Tungchow Roads, and further out fires were reported near the Lion Forest Forts in Woosung and near Dah Zang and Liuhong. Late in the afternoon, a huge fire was burning at the corner of Haining and North Szechuen Roads, believed to be the much burnt Hongkew Hotel.

Japanese have decided to evacuate all their remaining civilians from Tsingtao immediately and the decision has had the effect of relieving the tension which has been felt in the northern city since the opening of hostilities. The procedure to be followed will be the same as that employed in Hankow, where the Japanese interests were placed under the safekeeping of the Chinese until the return of the evacuees. The move is strategic for the Japanese, since it avoids division of their forces along three fronts and leaves them with but two major fronts, North China and Shanghai.

The text of the British note to Tokio regarding the shooting of Sir Hughe Knatchbull-Hugessen was made public today and embodies three requests:

1. A formal apology to be conveyed by Japan to Britain.
2. Suitable punishment of those responsible for the attack.
3. An assurance by the Japanese authorities that necessary measures will be taken to prevent a recurrence of incidents of such a character.

Some important clauses of the note are quoted below:

"Although non-combatants, including residents of the country concerned, must accept the inevitable risk of injury resulting indirectly from the normal conduct of hostilities, it is one of the oldest and best-established rules of international law that direct or deliberate attacks on non-combatants are absolutely prohibited, whether inside or outside the area in which hostilities are taking place."

"Aircraft are in no way exempt from this rule, which applies as much to an attack from the air as to any other form of attack. Nor can a plea of accident be accepted where the facts are such as to show, at best, negligence and complete disregard for the sanctity of civilian life."

"In the present case the facts which have been recorded, make it clear that this was not an accident resulting from any normal hostile operation, and it should have been obvious to the aircraft that they were dealing with non-combatants."

"The fact that, in the present case, no actual state of war has been declared, or is expressly recognised by either party to exist, emphasises the inexcusable nature of what occurred."

"It is pertinent to observe that, in this particular case, the Ambassador was travelling in a locality where there were no Chinese troops, nor any actual hostilities in progress. No Chinese troops, in fact, were encountered by the Ambassador's party until about an hour's drive from the scene of the attack.

"His Majesty's Government feel that they must take this opportunity to emphasize the wider significance of this event. It is an outstanding

example of the results to be expected from indiscriminate attack from the air."

"Such events are inseparable from the practice, as illegal as it is inhuman, of failing to draw that clear distinction between combatants and non-combatants in the conduct of hostilities which international law, no less than the conscience of mankind, has always enjoined."

London quarters in commenting on the note stated that its tenor was extremely mild and that no doubt was felt that Tokio would be able to meet its provisions.

August 31

The day was opened in spectacular fashion with air raids by Chinese planes between 2:45 a.m. and 3:05 a.m. In all, four bombs were dropped in the Yangtzepoo district, two of which failed to explode. Japanese planes were active during the day, dropping four bombs on the North Station in the early morning, and bombing in the Kiangwan area later in cooperation with an infantry attack supported by artillery, which the Chinese claim to have repulsed. There was also aerial bombing of the district east of Tazang in the afternoon.

With the exception of shelling in the area from north of the North Station westward to the region of the Mint, west Chapei was fairly quiet, the fighting in the immediate vicinity of Shanghai being centered in the northern district near Kiangwan. Large fires, however, were observed at 2:00 p.m. near Thorburn and Yangtzepoo Roads, and near Yochow Road at the Settlement Boundary.

Chinese claim that the Japanese forces around Lotien, the scene of exceptionally heavy fighting today, were falling back on Hsuchingchang. They also claim that the Japanese have landed a great number of troops in the vicinity of Woosung and Liuho for a drive into the interior, a claim which is borne out in part by the Japanese assertion that their Infantry troops, aided by the air force and naval detachments, captured Woosung Village and the Woosung Railway Station in a short attack starting at 8:00 a.m.

The bombing of the Yanghong bus station yesterday by Japanese airman resulted in the killing of over 200 refugees and wounded soldiers, private Chinese sources disclosed. Fu Tan University was also reported heavily damaged.

Canton was subjected to its first air raid at 6 o'clock this morning when a squadron of Japanese bombers penetrated a heavy anti-aircraft barrage to drop two bombs on gun emplacements near Shaho by the military airdrome. Chinese claim to have brought down two of the bombers with an attack by pursuit ships near the Bocca Tigris forts. The Chinese population was reported to have been terrified, necessitating the closing of the gates into Shameen.

The diplomatic scene was colored by an appeal from Generalissimo Chiang Kai-shek for intervention in the present conflict by foreign powers. He stated in part, "Intervention is necessary not for China's sake but for international safety." In the same interview, General Chiang included in the results of the conflict so far "the unified rallying of the people of China to defend themselves . . . ," and, "the revelation of the systematic intention of Japan to devastate the important seaports of China so that commerce will be ruined and foreign interests driven from the Continent." When asked the terms upon which China would be willing to terminate hostilities, the Generalissimo replied, "That question can only be answered when Japan decides to withdraw from the impossible position in which she finds herself . . . "

The S.S. President Hoover, crack 22,000 ton liner of the Dollar Co. fleet, was bombed at 6 p.m. this evening off Woosung by a squadron of Chinese planes. Direct hits were scored on the vessel, although most of the bombs exploded in the water nearby, and several persons were reported injured, in the meager accounts reaching Shanghai tonight. Three of the injured required immediate operations which were performed by the surgeon of H.M.S. Cumberland, which rushed to the scene of the disaster from her anchorage at Woosung.

Four Chinese planes participated in the attack, mistaking, according to the statement made tonight by Mayor O.K. Yui, the liner for a Japanese transport. The ship was at the time of the bombing 20 miles at sea and 50 miles from Woosung. She was on her regular run from Hongkong to Shanghai but after the accident was ordered to omit the call at this port and to proceed directly to Kobe. The President McKinley, due here tomorrow, also received orders to omit the call at Shanghai and go straight to Kobe. A great number of Americans who were booked to evacuate on the two vessels are now stranded although some of them are planning to go to Japan tomorrow on a Japanese ship and there catch the President Hoover or the President McKinley.

A spokesman of the Chinese Government tonight issued the following statement in regard to the incident:

"The Chinese authorities have learned with deep regret that the ss. President Hoover was to-day bombed by mistake by a Chinese aeroplane resulting in injury to certain persons aboard."

"Upon being informed of the unfortunate event, the Government immediately ordered an investigation by the military authorities and at the same time expressed to the American authorities its readiness to assume responsibility and make immediate redress for the incident."

"Preliminary reports appear to indicate that the ss. President Hoover, whose position at the time of the incident was between two Japanese warships, was mistaken by the Chinese airman for a Japanese military transport. Earlier in the day, the Chinese air force had received reports that Japanese military transports were arriving at Shanghai."

"It goes without saying that the Chinese military and air forces, whose sole object is to resist Japanese aggression, would never consider making a deliberate attack on vessels of any third Power."

"Negotiations have already been started at Nanking for an early settlement of this deplorable incident. The Chinese Ambassador at Washington has also been instructed to convey to the Department of State the regret of the Chinese Government and its readiness to make immediate redress for the incident."

September 1

Woosung Village and Forts continue to be the center of the heaviest fighting in the Shanghai area, as the Chinese are making a determined stand to prevent Japanese forces from penetrating inland after landing. Chinese reports today have the Japanese in the Lotien sector in a precarious plight as the Chinese army has them cornered to the northwest of the village and is reported to have inflicted heavy losses. Japanese landings in the Yangtzepoo area were admitted today, three transports contributing to the reinforcements. Tung Chi University is believed to be in Japanese hands following their drive towards Paoshan yesterday.

Foreign observers coming into the Whangpoo yesterday counted more than 80 Japanese war vessels off Woosung, including 10 transports. From their account, it would appear as though Woosung itself is in Japanese hands and quiet. All of the area showed signs of heavy bombardment.

Reports came in today of a battle several days ago in the Lotien sector in which the Japanese are stated to have killed some 500 Chinese soldiers in a night hand-to hand engagement with rifles and bayonets. Yesterday morning in the same sector a Chinese machinegun nest was stated to have been blown up by a land mine planted by Japanese engineers, one of whom lost his life in the explosion.

Japanese reports further state that their naval aircraft this afternoon raided Chinese supply lines to the north of Shanghai. Yesterday their target was the Kwangteh airdrome near Hangchow, at which point they destroyed four planes on the ground, including one large twin-motored bomber.

Japanese planes bombed extensively today in the Shanghai area, concentrating on the Chapei and Chenju sectors. From 2:00-3:00 p.m. bombs were dropped near the wireless station and, a bit later, near Jessfield Park, Markham Road yards and the North Station were bombed between 3:00 p.m. and 4:00 and five fires were observed in the neighborhood of the station.

Shelling was heavy all through the day, the North Station, Markham Road, Kiangwan, Hongkew, Wayside and Yangtzepoo districts all coming in for attention. Fires were reported to have been started from shellfire near Chung Shing and Tatung Roads. A huge fire broke out this afternoon near Nantao in the Marche de l'Est section.

Chinese planes were reported raiding twice in the early hours of the morning, but no missiles were dropped in the Settlement. No activity on the part of the Chinese air force in the Shanghai district was observed during daylight hours.

On the whole, the war in this area seems to be settling down to a long drawn-out affair. No significant gains were claimed by either side for the day's fighting. Chinese are still definitely in possession of the North Station area and their lines in eastern Chapei have not been moved back by the Japanese.

September 2

A statement by the Japanese Government, released in Shanghai today, regarding the possible detention of ships along the China coast may have the most serious consequences in the future. The statement, in essence, held that Japan may be forced to take "effective and suitable measures to stop all importation of arms and ammunition into China." What those steps will be is not disclosed as yet but the spokesman releasing the statement said that ships of third parties may be subject to inspection by Japanese to ascertain whether the use of foreign flags is legitimate or a subterfuge by Chinese.

Assuming full responsibility for the incident and stating a readiness to make immediate redress, the Chinese Government's statement to the United States Government on the bombing of the S.S. President Hoover was delivered today to Secretary of State Cordell Hull by the Chinese Ambassador, Dr. C. T. Wang.

Meanwhile, the action of Admiral H. E. Yarnell in ordering American ships to omit Shanghai as a port of call was stated today by Secretary of State Hull to be but a temporary measure instituted as a precaution. The statement is interpreted to mean that the withdrawal of American business interests here is not advocated.

A terrific typhoon struck Hongkong at two a.m. today, causing a heavy loss of life and extensive property damage. Several ships in the harbor went aground, including the large N. Y. K. motor-vessel "Asama Maru" and the B. & S. ships Kwangchow and Shuntien. The downtown area of Hongkong is hard hit with wrecked automobiles standing on the streets and shop fronts blown in. Loss of life among the Chinese is reported to be extremely high.

With the major fighting of the Shanghai district still being centered in the Woosung-Lotien area, both Chinese and Japanese reports today claim success for their troops there. The Chinese claim that the Japanese are fighting northwest of Lotien with their backs to the wall in a desperate attempt to avoid being bottled up and annihilated. Chinese are reported still holding Woosung against Japanese attacks designed to take the area and turn the flank of the army stationed along the Yangtze. The Japanese claim the capture of the Lion Forest Forts today and state that probably

before the day is out Paoshan will also fall as their forces are "knocking at the gates."

Fighting during the night and early morning along the east Chapei border, the Paoshan Road and North Station sector, was brisk but neither side made any headway. Chinese in this area again came in for the nightly barrage of heavy artillery fire from the warships in the river, while Chinese batteries in the vicinity of Chenju kept up a spirited reply to the naval fire. Between 10:00 a.m. and 10:30 a.m., northern Chapei was being heavily shelled. At 6:30 this morning two male Chinese were wounded by splinters of a shell which fell within the Settlement at the corner of Ichang and Gordon Roads, evidently a stray from the Japanese shelling of the Markham Road yards.

Continued aerial bombing of the Chenju radio station, including a raid last night, was explained by the command of the Japanese Third Fleet as being necessary because the premises was a base of military operations. For the same reason Chinese concentrations at Kating, Tachong and Quinsan were also subjected to aerial attacks.

Three foreigners, Mr. A. Canetti, Mr. R. Berg, and Mr. H. Ross were subjected to Chinese rifle or machinegun fire while driving in no-man's-land on the Kiangwan front this afternoon. Two of them were wounded and the third escaped unhit. The three men had obtained a Japanese pass for the purpose of visiting their godown in the Yangtzepoo area and after the inspection had driven out through the back streets of Hongkew to see something of the war. Inasmuch as their pass did not include this area the German Consulate is not expected to take any action on the matter.

In the north, the Chinese reports have by inference admitted Japanese possession of Kalgan and the strategic Nankow Pass, when they state that the Chinese forces have taken up positions for a counter-offensive. Their forces are reported, however, on the Tientsin-Pukow front, after severe fighting, to have made substantial moves toward Tientsin.

The writer, in company with another staff member of the *Shanghai Evening Post and Mercury*, interviewed General Wang Chiang-chiu, commander of the 87th Division, "somewhere near Tachang" last night. In a candle-lit room the 34 year-old general admitted Japanese landings all along the Woosung-Liuho-Lotien front but stated that despite the Japanese superiority in artillery they had not been able to penetrate inland. He stated that Kating, seven miles from Lotien and the junction of several important highways, was the present objective of the Japanese. According to the general, fighting along the front has been mainly confined to hand-to-hand conflicts in which the Japanese came off second best with much heavier losses than the Chinese troops. These losses offset Chinese casualties from the heavy naval guns so that the total losses on both sides were about equal. Lotien, held by both Chinese and Japanese troops, he said, was thus spared artillery fire from the naval guns.

The trip out to the divisional headquarters was made by motor car under cover of darkness with a Chinese liaison officer as escort. All Chinese troops encountered along the way appeared to be cheerful and well equipped.

September 3

Further reports on the typhoon which struck Hongkong yesterday graphically portray the extent of the catastrophe. The wind is reported to have reached a velocity of 65 miles per hour with the barometer at 29.298.

The writer, while driving down the Bund on business at 2:30 this afternoon, was just missed by a shell from Pootung which went over the top of the car to burst in the street 30 feet away and injure eight persons. One of the wounded, a Russian Volunteer, W. Kosnyreff, was seriously hurt and bleeding profusely and was picked up by this writer and taken to the hospital where medical aid was given him. An Indian watchman and eight Chinese were the others wounded by the shell which miraculously did not kill anyone outright. Two of the Chinese died, however, after admission to the hospital. The shell fell during the course of an artillery duel in which Chinese batteries in Pootung were shelling the Japanese warships off Pootung Point and were being shelled by the warships in reply.

Another shell fell in the International Settlement at the corner of Bubbling Well and Yates Road at 6.00 p.m. and injured 14, all Chinese. Ten minutes later another fell at 830 Bubbling Well Rd., wounding one coolie. During the afternoon, a shell, apparently from Wayside, struck in Boulvard des Deux Republiques and wounded five Chinese.

The artillery duel continued most of the late morning and all afternoon and direct hits on objectives were scored by the Chinese with the Japanese shelling, deep in Pootung, having unknown results. A Japanese transport lying off the Consulate was observed by the writer to be hit and wounded men were taken ashore. The Idzumo and several destroyers were firing at point blank range into the Point and a huge fire was started at the Foo Shing Dock and the China Merchants' Engineering Works Wharf at tiffin time. Chinese shells scored several hits on the Japanese Consulate and four Japanese are reported to have been wounded there.

The artillery exchange was started when a Chinese woman yulohed a sampan past the Idzumo toward Nantao. Swimming beside the sampans were four men. When they reached a point in the river south of the creek they were strafed by a machinegun from a small picket boat anchored nearby, no hits being scored as far as could be observed. The swimmers proceeded to Pootung Point and the woman kept her course up river. Japanese later rounded up the whole party and several other Chinese besides, on the spot, but all were later stated to have been released. Meanwhile a body of Chinese troops had proceeded to the

Pootung Point and fired on the Japanese with rifles and machineguns. The naval guns replied at point blank range. Then Chinese artillery cut in on the party from somewhere deep in Pootung and the "Battle of Pootung Point" was under way.

During the night, short encounters in the North Station district were heard from the Settlement, also artillery fire in the district from an unknown source. Three fires were reported, one approximately 1/4 mile east of Hongkew Rifle Range; one near the Settlement boundary in the Wayside district and one in the vicinity of Medhurst College, beyond Settlement limits.

The Chinese claim to be progressing with their enveloping movement north of Lotien with 2,000 to 3,000 Japanese troops practically surrounded. Fierce fighting near Liuhong is reported by the same source to have resulted in a Japanese retreat.

Reported today was the presence of a Japanese bomber over Amoy, apparently engaged in raiding the city.

While quiet continued to reign along the Peiping-Hankow front, skirmishes are again reported to have broken out in Hsiaochan, southeast of Tientsin, between Chinese plajnclothesmen and Japanese, with the fighting plainly audible in Tientsin. Chinese reports of the fighting all along the northern fronts claim advances in spite of the Japanese reinforcements and artillery brought up in preparation for a huge drive. Pouring rains are again hampering the motorized Japanese units.

September 4

Foreign-controlled areas again had fire directed upon them when shrapnel and machinegun missiles raining indiscriminately all over the Settlement and Concession, killed two and wounded 51 others. All of the victims were Chinese.

The bullets and shrapnels are believed to have come from the Chinese firing upon Japanese bombers which raided the North Station area and east Chapei practically the whole morning from 7.00 a.m., and drew extensive fire from the Chinese ground troops. One bomb was observed to have struck the Markham Road Railway Junction at 9:45 a.m., setting the yards on fire.

One of the Japanese bombing planes, while over the Markham Road Railway Yards, suddenly burst with a tremendous explosion in mid-air and fell in flames. A second explosion occurred when it hit the ground. The plane is believed to have been hit by a Chinese anti-aircraft shell. The spectacular sight was clearly visible from most sections of the Settlement.

The Chinese still claim to be taking the initiative around Woosung and on the Lotien front, stating that they have driven the Japanese beyond Woosung Creek to the edge of the river, although the Japanese claim to have advanced eight kilometers west of Woosung in the recent fighting. The Chinese assert that they are still completing their encircling movement north of Lotien and that the detachment of Japanese there will be liquidated. On fighting in that area, the Japanese spokesman today stated that by evening the Japanese troops would undoubtedly be drinking sake in Lotien and Paoshan.

A Japanese warship, according to reports received here today, took up a position yesterday outside Amoy harbor and systematically shelled the forts. The ship is reported to have attempted to land marines but the operation failed because of the spirited return fire from the forts.

Evacuation of civilians from Shanghai is still in progress with 500 leaving today on the Sphinx, tied up outside Woosung, after having been transported down river on the French sloop Dumont d'Urville. The evacuees were destined for ports all the way from Hongkong to Europe.

Meanwhile, as editorial and semi-official comment all over the world continues to place Japan in the role of an aggressor nation, Foreign Minister Koki Hirota has issued a statement to newspapermen in which, after passing over the origin of the present hostilities, "which you all know so well," he states that the first requisite to a cessation of hostilities is a complete withdrawal of Chinese military forces from the vicinity of the Settlement. The full text of the statement follows:

"There has developed between Japan and China a situation which is indeed very regrettable. I shall not touch upon the origin and development of the present incident which you all know so well. I wish only to emphasize here the high degree of patience and forbearance with which the Japanese Government have consistently been striving to bring about a peaceful settlement since the time of the Lukouchiao Affair."

"Our Government, hoping to reach a pacific solution through local settlement, did everything possible to prevent aggravation of the situation in spite of the repeated bad faith of the Chinese."

"The Nanking Government, which manifested complete lack of sincerity, not only rejected the agreement arrived at on the spot, but also moved vast armies northward, challenging Japan directly.

"Moreover, they incited and instigated popular feeling against this country to such an extent that the lives and property of our nationals throughout China were suddenly jeopardized as the conflict began to spread.

"We lost no time in ordering the evacuation of Japanese residents from Hankow and other points on the Yangtze, as well as from various places in Shanghai and South China."

"This measure was taken with a view to forestalling the occurrence of any untoward incidents, and this, more than anything else, demonstrated powerfully our sincerity in observing our avowed policy of non-aggression."

"Of course, this measure involved untold sacrifices on our part as it amounted to complete

abandonment of business interests acquired after years of arduous toil by our nationals."

"However, we decided to bear even that for the purpose of avoiding an aggravation of the situation."

"Again, when on July 11, the Cabinet decided on dispatching contingents in view of the North China situation which was growing worse every moment, we still clung to the anticipation of bringing about an amicable solution and continued to nourish hopes that the Nanking Government would reconsider their attitude."

"Thus, to the last moment, we sought and strove for a pacific settlement, firmly determined as we were to prevent an armed clash and we took exactly the same attitude in regard to the Affair."

"In some quarters abroad, people seem to be under the erroneous impression that at Shanghai Japan was retaliating for the murder of an officer and sailor of her Naval Landing Party by Chinese Peace Preservation Corps."

"Nothing could be further from the truth. Of course, China was entirely to blame for the shooting of our Marines, but our Government with the greatest self-restraint, endeavored to reach an amicable settlement through diplomatic channels."

"Hostilities broke out in Shanghai, because China, in violation of the agreement for the cessation of hostilities around Shanghai, concluded in 1932, rushed her regular troops into forbidden area and strengthened her Peace Preservation Corps, both in number and equipment, and then deliberately provoked the Japanese."

"Our Government firmly believe that a first prerequisite, these Chinese forces could be made to withdraw from the fighting area, and Chinese military works in the vicinity of the International Settlement should be removed, if the city is to be spared the disastrous effects of an armed conflict."

"In other words, foreign lives and property in Shanghai are menaced, not by small Japanese forces defending the Settlement, but rather by Chinese armies which relying on their vastly superior numbers, undertake an offensive against the Japanese."

"In fact, in our desire to maintain peace and security in and around Shanghai, we were giving favorable consideration to a proposal of the Powers to preserve these regions from the danger of hostilities, when the Chinese launched a sudden attack on the International Settlement, our Consulate-General and our warships on the Whangpoo, bombing them indiscriminately from the air."

September 5

Today was apparently a day of rest for the opposing armies on this front, judging by the small amount of news from the lines. Japanese aircraft, however, bombed the small villages of Poshingtu and Chengkado. The total casualty list, embraced 259 victims, most of whom were cared for by volunteers from the Settlement. The two villages are situated on an extra-Settlement road outside the perimeter of the defense lines near Brenan and Warren Roads. Chinese troops are believed to be concentrated nearby since the ten bombers dropped many bombs at other points in the vicinity, including Tsauhachaio Bridge.

Other Japanese planes bombed almost continuously throughout the day, including a raid by a single plane to the rear of the Socony installation in Pootung and steady bombing of points in Chapei. Naval guns were active in the early morning, throwing shells in the direction of Kiangwan between 4:30 a.m. and 5:00 a.m. Heavy fighting was heard in the vicinity of Woosung during the day but no reports as to gains or losses came through this evening.

The expected formal announcement of the blockade of the entire China coast to Chinese shipping was made today by Vice-Admirals Yoshida and Hasegawa. The blockade, first stage of which was instituted August 25, now extends the distance of the entire China coast from Chingwantao, in the north to Pakhoi, in the south, exempting only the port of Tsingtao and territories leased by third powers. All Chinese vessels, Government-owned and private, are included in the sweeping proclamation, effective at 6:00 p.m. tonight.

By the joint action of both Settlement and Concession authorities, curfew has been extended from 10 p.m. to 11:30 p.m. as "an experimental measure."

September 6

Brisk firing at 4:20 a.m. heralded the starting of a major advance on the part of the Japanese naval forces in the extreme eastern portion of the Yangtzepoo front today. The movement, while not identified by the official Japanese spokesman as the long expected "big push," was stated to have progressed on an average of two miles along the entire front by nightfall tonight. Paoshan is still in Japanese hands with no evidence of the planned Chinese counter-attack. Along the Whangpoo, Jukong Wharf is reported to have fallen to the advancing Japanese.

While artillery was used in the advance along the east Yangtzepoo front, together with trench mortars, grenades, machineguns and rifles, the use of the heavier guns was for the most part confined to the Kiangwan-Liuhong sector by the Japanese warships. Many shells were observed to be landing in this area from 10:00 p.m. to 12:00 noon. The Chinese artillery, in reply, seemed to be directing their fire at the Naval Landing Party Barracks. In the early afternoon, Japanese planes were observed to be bombing in three distinct areas: north of the North Station, two or three hundred yards from the Settlement Boundary; the Shanghai-Nanking Railway north of St. John's University; and Far Eastern Race Course. At 3:20 p.m. a large fire was observed near the public mortuary, in the vicinity of the Hongkew Fire Station.

Two interesting reports were made by foreign

observers today. One was to the effect that a concentration of at least 40 Japanese warships was standing off Chapoo and that, while no landing had as yet been made, one might be expected at any time. Another foreigner reports that there are nearly 10,000 Chinese snipers in plainclothes on the Pootung shore, hiding in godowns during the day and sniping at the warships and Wayside and Hongkew during the night.

Reported by a British news agency today was the seizure by a Japanese destroyer of two Chinese Customs cruisers last night off Green Point near Hongkong. One of the cruisers was reported to have been sunk. British officers aboard the craft reached the shore safely in sampans.

Meanwhile, as 287 Japanese evacuated Hongkong, a Japanese destroyer bombarded Chekwan, on the coast outside the western boundaries of the Colony. Large stores of munitions are believed to have been landed at this point recently by the Chinese. Unconfirmed rumors in the southern port run to the effect that Chinese steamers outside the Colony waters are being stopped and searched.

The command of all of the Japanese armies in the north has passed to the former minister of War, General Terauchi. His forces, stated to be nine divisions in strength, are believed to be planning an offensive on all fronts immediately. Chinese dispatches from the north state that a Japanese attack on the Chinese flank at Machang, 17 miles south of Tientsin, was repulsed yesterday with heavy losses. The Japanese forces are still stated to be hampered in their operations by the muddy nature of the terrain over which their motorized columns have to pass.

President Franklin D. Roosevelt today issued a statement to newspapermen which already this evening has become the major topic of conversation in the American colony here. The full text is as follows:

> *"American citizens who are still in China are there at their own risk. They were several times asked to leave the country. Some refused, others who were in the interior of the country probably have not had time to leave."*

September 7

The Japanese reply to the British protest over the machinegunning of Sir Hughe Knatchbull-Hugessen was handed today to the Ambassador to Tokio, Sir Robert Craigie. Expressing regret that Sir Hughe was wounded, the note describes the time and locality of the shooting as "incidental to hostilities actually in progress in the region of Taitsang on that particular day." Also embodying the statement that fresh instructions have been issued to Japanese authorities in China to "exercise strictest caution in this regard," the note points out that it has never been definitely established that the attacking planes in this incident were Japanese. It further denies the British statement that Japanese aircraft "attack non-combatants indiscriminately."

In commenting on the affair today, Mr. Azuma, leader of the Japanese Conservatives, asked whether this could not be considered as a Chinese trick, and "whether the British Ambassador was not more responsible than anyone else."

International in complications also was the seizure of the two Chinese Customs cruisers yesterday, directly affecting foreign powers by endangering the revenues which form the collateral for their loans. The problem was answered by the Japanese press spokesman today when he stated, "The Customs is Chinese, and although our seizure of these cruisers may indirectly affect foreign powers, the Chinese government is to be held responsible." The same spokesman revealed that a reply by the Japanese to the proposals of third parties to create a neutral zone in Pootung has been made, although he could not reveal its content.

The Japanese "Big Push," if the present Japanese movements in the eastern district are that, is quiet today by Japanese admission, while the Chinese state that they are still waiting. In the face of the Japanese claims, the Chinest state that they are in possession of Paoshan after a series of counter-attacks —a statement ridiculed by the Japanese who have stated that the Chinese are so far away from the town and things are so quiet that the Japanese troops walk around in kimonos. Observed by this writer today was the Nipponese possession of Jukong Wharf and ground as far as Military Road, while the Chinese appear to be entrenched on the other side of the road. Four bombing planes escorted by four pursuit planes dropped 15 bombs on the Chinese positions in this area, 12 of which exploded. Heavy shelling of the district went on all through the day.

Western Chapei, centering around the railway tracks, was bombed intermittently during the day and Pootung came in for its share of death from the sky in the afternoon. Shelling of Chapei went on all day, mostly in the North Station and Markham Road section. At about 6.00 p.m. a Japanese battery in Yangtzepoo shook the Settlement when it shelled northern Chapei, near the Eight Character Bridge. No change was reported in the lines around the North Station area.

Chinese planes are reported to have bombed Japanese warships off Woosung last night, scoring direct hits on two destroyers and one cruiser. This was denied by the Japanese, who stated that the raid ended without damage to either side. Conflicting also were reports of an aerial dog fight over Soochow. The Japanese claim to have met ten Chinese Curtiss-Hawks with three pursuit planes, shooting down three of the Chinese planes and forcing another to make an emergency landing on Taihu Lake. In describing the same fight, the Chinese state that four Japanese bombers accompanied by four pursuits, after having raided Chinese airdromes from Hangchow to Kwangteh, were engaged by Chinese pursuit planes above Taihu Lake. One Japanese pursuit plane and one bomber were shot down. The Chinese pilot who downed one of the Japanese planes was stated to have reached a total of five Japanese planes to his credit.

American businessmen were inflamed today over the statement by President Roosevelt yesterday placing their further stay in China on their own heads. Most of them pointed out that they had never been asked to leave and, in any case, their interests here were too deep-rooted to be abandoned in such a rush. The Shanghai American Chamber of Commerce sent a telegram to Secretary of State Cordell Hull deprecating any statement which could be interpreted as indicating an abandonment of, or withdrawal from American interests in China.

The Grand Theatre, one of Shanghai's four first-run picture houses, will reopen on Friday. With the extension of the permissable hours during the operation of the curfew, this reopening of a theatre is taken as indicating a return to normalcy.

September 8

The writer entered the Yangtzepoo area today on a tour of inspection of the Japanese positions with another staff member of the *Shanghai Evening Post and Mercury*. We were stopped at the Japanese Golf Course with a warning that fighting immediately beyond made further progress too dangerous for us, but that if we returned in two days the area would be cleared to and beyond the University. Both sides of Kwenming Road between Chemulpo and Dalny Roads were almost completely wiped out by fire while over on Wayside Road the Hwa Ching Tobacco Company's huge plant was going up in flames. Apparently nothing in the vicinity of the Ward Road Jail remained to be burnt. On the whole, the area was peaceful excepting for the intermittent rifle and machinegun fire on the northern boundary.

The Japanese press spokesman this morning stated that there were in all 350,000 Chinese troops in the Shanghai-Wusih area. Artillery equipment was stated to be poor, with the heaviest pieces in Pootung. At the conference, the spokesman stated that repeated Chinese attacks on the Kiangwan and Chapei fronts were repulsed last night with severe losses to the Chinese.

Chinese shelled during the night the Japanese in Hongkew and Wayside and scored another hit on the Ward Road Jail 9:55 p.m. when a shell from the Pootung side struck the second floor and wounded four Chinese warders.

Fierce fighting went on all through last night as the Japanese thrust toward the Kiangwan Civic Center was contested at every step and finally turned back completely by the Chinese. Japanese army tanks were stated to have been used for the first time to penetrate the Chinese line of pill boxes, some of which were small fortresses holding sixty men. After bloody hand-to-hand fighting which reached its peak at eight this morning, the Japanese were stated to have been driven back to their positions on Military Road. In spite of all this, the Japanese this morning stated that their total losses in killed and wounded on the eastern Yangtzepoo front since fighting started there were between 50 and 60 men.

Heavy shelling of all Chinese positions in this area went on all through last night and today with several fragments reported as having dropped within the Settlement, causing no casualties. During the late morning and through the afternoon, Japanese planes bombed extensively the area around the Far Eastern Race Course and the village of Liuhong. Many fires were observed last night, while today a huge fire was seen about 100 yards southeast of Medhurst College.

The Chinese Communist Army has been reorganized into the Eighth Route Army under direct control of the Military Affairs Commission. The two leaders of the Red Army, Generals Chu Teh and Peng Teh-hui have been appointed commander-in-chief and deputy commander-in-chief of the reorganized forces by a proclamation of Generalissimo Chiang Kai-shek on August 22, just released. The new governmental force will move eastward to engage the enemy, according to the announcement here.

Firing was again heard last night in the southeastern suburban villages of Tientsin, indicating that the Chinese are still in possession of ground in this area despite the Japanese claimed advance at Machang.

Clarification of the Presidential statement which caused such a storm of comment among Americans here was made by Secretary of State Cordell Hull today when he said that the statement was intended as a warning to missionaries and not in any case as an indication of withdrawal of support from the Americans in China. The American Naval units and Marine contingents here will not be moved and those on the way will not be diverted, according to the statement made.

September 9

The immediate area of the business district of the Settlement enjoyed a much needed holiday from the sounds and sights of conflict as both parties to this "undeclared conflict" took a breather last night and this morning. Bombing planes, however, rained their missiles on the north, west, and south sections of the fighting area. Late in the morning, Japanese airplanes bombed the Kiangnan Arsenal area with very little military result. At 2.00 p.m. they were over again, a bit farther to the west, their apparent objective being the Chinese Naval Airdrome. Again reports placed the damage on the small side. A total of 23 casualties is reported for both bombings, five of them fatal. A claim that a Japanese seaplane flew over the Settlement today with an aerial torpedo plainly visible from its racks was pooh-poohed by the Japanese press spokesman, who pointed out that it must have been an optical illusion.

Issued also in today's press conference by the Japanese was a statement that the Japanese forces all along the eastern front advanced during the night and day, accounts and other details of the fighting were not disclosed. The Chinese in their press conference confined themselves to a statement that disposition of the lines remained unchanged.

On the Paoshan Road-North Station front, bombing was observed during the day, as was also intermittent rifle and machinegun fire, with the respective lines evidently unchanged. Civic Center was again bombed in mid-morning and at noon a large fire was observed to be burning in this area.

Anti-aircraft fire directed at Japanese planes again produced casualties within the Settlement boundaries. A number of anti-aircraft shells fell in the Settlement near Markham and Wuting Roads at 3:00 p.m. One person was reported injured. At 5:15 p.m. three Japanese planes flying over the Settlement drew fire from the Pootung side. Three of the anti-aircraft shells fell in Hankow Road near Szechuen Road, wounding one Chinese constable.

More accurate reports on the bombing by Japanese airplanes of the Sungkiang Railway Station on the Shanghai-Hangchow line placed the deaths at 300, with 400 injured. All casualties were refugee passengers of a passenger train which left Jessfield station at 10:10 yesterday morning.

The safety zone proposed by foreign powers for the Shanghai area seems doomed to failure since informed circles state that the main tenor of the Japanese reply was to the effect that the Chinese should move farther away than the distance called for in the proposal—a suggestion to which the Chinese cannot agree.

Heavy engagements in Shansi, the "model province," between Japanese troops, supported by armored cars and tanks, and Chinese infantry, have resulted in advances along the Peiping-Suiyuan Railway toward Tatung by the Japanese Tsutsumi Division. The Chinese admit a major engagement but state that they successfully repulsed the enemy.

September 10

Artillery duels over the Whangpoo which shook the Settlement were the features of the day's fighting here. Chinese batteries in Pootung opened the activities when they placed two shrapnel shells near the Japanese Consulate to explode over the roof. Then shells began to fall around the Idzumo and the warships anchored nearby, some reaching inland to burst on Nanzing Road and on the wharves. A Japanese hospital ship, the America Maru, was directly in the line of fire. The Idzumo and the destroyers tied nearby returned the fire, throwing shells into Pootung about two miles back of the Nantao Bund. The Idzumo also fired point blank into the warehouses lining the Pootung shore, presumably to rout snipers.

Planes then took the air, six of them, to search the Pootung and Nantao districts but they dropped no bombs. Early in the afternoon, both sides fired a few rounds but the flurry soon died down. At 4:30 in the afternoon, the show started up again bigger and better, with six Japanese ships firing from the river and the Chinese holding up their end from Pootung. The N.Y.K. Wharf was hit and some of the Chinese shells exploded as far in as Haining and Range Roads, to start a fire at the Japanese branch headquarters there. Another fire was started in the vicinity of the Savoy Hotel. The naval craft raked the shore with their machineguns while Chinese snipers in the warehouses replied with their rifles and machineguns. It was a brisk battle while it lasted and several Japanese casualties were observed taken aboard the America Maru before it moved down river. Two casualties were reported within the Settlement, although a shell which exploded in the center of the Central Police Compound injured no one.

Shelling of the Chapei district went on all last night. The base of a twelve-inch shell landed on the roof of the Foo Foong Flour mill, where the American Marines have an observation post. Six shells, falling in the Sinza district nearby, injured a number of Chinese. Heavy machinegun fire was audible in the North Station area last night and a large fire was observed near the Water Tower.

Most of the aerial bombardment and heavy ground fighting went on in the vicinity of the Far Eastern Race Course, where the Japanese claim to be advancing toward the Civic Center and the Chinese claim to be taking back ground previously lost.

Basing their assumption on the fact that over 20 Japanese soldiers had died from cholera, the Japanese spokesman today made the charge that the Chinese were instituting germ warfare. No steps have as yet been decided upon for retaliatory measures but the question is being studied, the spokesman added.

1300 Russians stranded in northern ports after the summer holidays were brought back to Shanghai today on the Rosalie Moller. The ship was forced to lie in midstream from noon through most of the afternoon, right through the heavy shelling, due to lack of berthing facilities.

While Chinese advices from the north continue to have their forces holding their own, it seems evident that the Japanese are slowly advancing. Reported today was the capture by the Japanese of the village of Chenkuantun, 500 meters north of Machang, and a general offensive directed at the capture of the tactically important Machang. In northern Shansi, the Japanese troops seem to be slowly enveloping Tatung with the capture yesterday of several outlying villages.

In an official message addressed to the nation, Premier Konoye today stated that the fundamental policy of Japan is still cooperation with China. Through this policy Japan "hopes to share with other nations welfare and happiness."

The nation, Prince Konoye declared, also hopes for the establishment of peace in the Orient. The message continues:

"China, however, always forgot her neighboring relations with Japan and violated fidelity."

"Moreover, she has indulged in anti-Japanese policies for many years past and has infringed upon Japanese interests. This attitude was responsible for the current incident."

"Japanese soldiers called to the front in China are now fighting for the sake of justice, while the

entire Japanese nation is faithfully performing its duty."

"The current dispute is so deep-rooted in origin that it is impossible to predict at this moment how the current incident will develop."

"In view of the grave situation, the nation is asked to be firmly resolved to win the expected objective and to endure whatever difficulties may come with an indefatigable will."

"Our nation for centuries past has always overcome grave nationd crises, and invariably enhanced national prestige and prosperity."

"In the face of the current crisis, I urge the nation to cherish our ancient spirit and follow the principles of loyalty and patriotism, exhibit co-operation and conform with the Imperial wishes, and thus to further the spirit of Dai-Nippon."

"I expect the entire nation to secure unity, and simultaneously to strive to expand national power with the ultimate objective of maintaining prosperity of the Imperial Throne."

Meanwhile, the Japanese airforce again raided South China cities yesterday, including Swatow, Chaoan, Pearl River forts, and Huanshan, causing considerable damage. While the raids were conducted, Japanese warships systematically shelled the seaports, setting fire to a number of buildings and small vessels tied up near the mouth of the Pearl River.

September 11

The temporary lull in hostilities, other than artillery duels, which has prevailed during the past two days and nights, was dissipated last night when fierce fighting broke out all along the front from Yangtzepoo to Lotien. Generally the Chinese claim to be holding their own in the face of heavy Japanese motorized attacks while the Japanese report gains on all fronts. A Chinese plane aided the ground forces at 3:30 a.m. when it dropped several bombs on Japanese positions in the Yangtzepoo area after penetrating anti-aircraft fire. The Japanese report that they are in control of Lotien and the town of Yanghangchen, 10 kilometers inland, after a push which the Chinese claim to have repulsed. It is certain that the Chinese line of pill-boxes defending the Civic Center are still manned by Chinese and that the Far Eastern Race Course is still in Chinese hands. Japanese gains, if any, in this area are believed to be small with the result that the "big push," if this is it, is not proceeding according to Japanese expectations. The fighting in the Paoshan Road area produced no change in the situation.

The Lunghwa Temple, formerly the headquarters of the commander of the Shanghai-Woosung Garrison, was the target of 20 bombs dropped in the morning and 20 more in the afternoon by Japanese planes, in addition to ground-strafing by machinegun fire. Casualties were reported as 10 killed and 30 wounded with two of the injured being soldiers. The Temple and the famous Lunghwa Pagoda were untouched.

Also bombed this afternoon was the Civic Center area while shelling of the Chinese positions along the Yuehpu-Yanghong lines was accomplished by the Japanese warships at Woosung and on the Yangtze. Chinese field pieces shelled the Naval Landing Party Barracks during the day and, on the fighting line, claim to have put four Japanese tanks out of commission with direct hits.

In a battle described as the fiercest yet fought on that front although but of an hour's duration, Japanese troops captured two more small villages to the west of Machang. Artillery and aerial bombardment were used in the attack. At the same time, the Japanese thrust into northern Shansi toward Tatung has reached a point just 50 miles away from that important town.

After stating that the operations here so far were fully up to expectations, Japanese War Minister Sugiyama went on to add that his country will press forward to an early termination of the conflict. At the same time, Prince Konoye issued a statement in which he predicted that the fighting will extend into 1938.

Indicative of the accuracy with which this conflict is being reported by news agencies of both fighting nations, a report appeared in Tokio, issued with a Shanghai date line by the largest Japanese agency, that two of the Chinese members of the news staff of the *Shanghai Evening Post and Mercury* had been shot by the Chinese forces as traitors, allegedly for writing news detrimental to the Chinese forces. Both Chinese members of the news staff of that newspaper are enjoying excellent health and describe the reports of their deaths in the Mark Twain manner as "exaggerated."

September 12

The front along the Yangtze and along the Yangtzepoo sectors saw heavy fighting starting this morning as the Japanese attacked all along their positions from Woosung to Lotien in an attempt to affect a junction of their forces along the Yangtze. Japanese forces also attacked along the Yangtzepoo front in an attempt to advance toward the Civic Center. Chinese troops were apparently holding their own in this sector and attacking on their own part on the Yangtze banks to recover lost ground. Heavy artillery and aerial bombs were utilized by the Japanese in both attacks.

In the Hongkew and Chapei sectors the war on the ground was quiet today. Chapei was shelled in the vicinity of the North Station and near the Chinese Isolation Hospital west of the Landing Party Barracks. These areas were also bombed at 11:00 a.m. as was also the district around the Civic Center and another district near the Hongkew Rifle Range. Chinese planes raided again shortly before midnight last night, dropping several bombs in the Yangtzepoo sector and allegedly damaging severely Japanese supplies.

In the north, a major war seems i-
140,000 Japanese are massing t-

Chinese in a more or less broken line 200 miles long. In general, the Japanese are pushing southward and westward along two main railways radiating out of the Tientsin and Peiping area, while Chinese troops are moving to oppose them, being particularly strong in the Tatung area. Japanese are reported to have captured Machang, south of Tientsin, yesterday morning. A major battle along the entire front is predicted for the near future.

September 13

As the war entered its second month, Chinese troops were in retreat all along the Shanghai front with a solid wall of fire all along the northern boundaries of the Settlement to cover their retirement and aid them in establishing new lines. The Chinese are known to have established a second line of defense of reputed strength stretching from Lotien on the Yangtze to Kiangwan and Chapei, and are stated to be retiring in orderly fashion to this line. The Japanese have taken over the Civic Center and the Far Eastern Race Course and describe the Chinese retreat as a rout, which seems improbable. While the Chinese are engaged in straightening their lines, they are reported by foreign observers to be exacting a heavy toll from the advancing Japanese troops and the general opinion today is that the Japanese still do not have enough troops in this area to try a major engagement with the main body of Chinese troops.

In addition to the main fire burning on the north boundary some 2½ miles long, several other fires were observed today. The fires which have been burning in the Markham Road Railway Yards appear to be spreading, while other large fires were seen in Chinese territory near Soochow Creek opposite Penang Road and also in the vicinity of the Far Eastern Race Course. Another line of fires was reported along the Yangtze from Liuhong to Yanghong, and still another large fire was seen in the vicinity of the Hongkew Rifle Range. A large fire was also observed near the Civic Center.

Japanese planes were active during the day, starting their operations with bombing of the Pootung side at 11:00 a.m. Early in the afternoon, six Japanese planes were bombing Nantao in the vicinity of the waterworks. Also bombed during the day were the following areas: Bang-poo west of the Shanghai Baptist Mission; southeast of the Chenju Wireless Station; Wong Tai Road near Zau Ka Zah; ½ mile east of the Chenju Station; Liuho; and ½ mile west of the Kiangwan Race Course. While over Pootung, the planes received stiff machinegun fire from the ground. Early in the afternoon, the entire west Chapei front was being shelled by the Japanese warships.

Chinese planes raided again last night, coming over at 7:25 p.m., 7:50 p.m., and 11:25 p.m. to be met by the usual spectacular anti-aircraft fire. Shrapnel again fell in the Settlement during the course of the raids and one Chinese was slightly injured on North Thibet Road, one killed at Gordon and Sinza Roads, and five injured at Avenue and Carter Roads.

In the north, the entire Chinese line was subjected to heavy aerial bombardment for over two hours by Japanese planes, badly damaging the positions in the mountains west of Peiping in particular. No major movements, other than the reported dispatch of General Chuh Teh and his troops to the aid of Tatung, were reported today.

September 14

Late yesterday afternoon, the Japanese attempted to penetrate the new Chinese lines extending from Kaochingmiao Depot on the Shanghai-Woosung Railway in the north and the International Race Course in the south. Their attacks were repulsed with heavy casualties, according to the Chinese reports today. The Chinese lines now extend from a point off Liuho, 60 kilometers to the North Station, via Lotien, Liuhong, Miaohong, Kiangwan, and Paitzuchiao (Eight Character Bridge). No change is reported in the Chinese positions surrounding the Japanese Naval Landing Party Barracks.

Japanese airplanes and artillery rained high explosives on all the Chinese positions on the Shanghai front this morning. The Commercial Press area; the Chapei West Power Station area; the area south of the Landing Party Barracks; and near the Hongkew Rifle Range—all were shelled and bombed throughout the morning. In the afternoon, the Commercial Press area was again bombed from 1:30 p.m. to 2:00 p.m. Also bombed were the areas around Liuhong, and a squadron of bombers worked on Tazang later in the afternoon.

Japanese warships shelled Pootung in the morning for over an hour from 6:00 a.m. Later in the afternoon a picket boat moved slowly up stream before the Point and was sprayed by machinegun fire from the shore. A cruiser moved into position opposite the Japanese Consulate a little later and Bund onlookers were prepared for landing operations which, however, never materialized.

The fires which were burning all along the eastern front were dampened by rainfall in the early morning hours and their spread was curtailed. It is believed now that they will burn themselves out.

Related today was the bombing yesterday by the Japanese of a refugee boat train on the upper reaches of Soochow Creak. Some 300 refugees were killed and wounded in the attack and 700 others endangered by the falling bombs. The 1,000 refugees were being evacuated from the war zone by the Shanghai Relief Committee. Settlement agencies cooperatd with Chinese organizations in removing the dead and wounded from the scene.

The writer witnessed the spectacular bombing of the China Alcohol Distillery Plant today by Japanese bombing planes. Flying over in formation, the planes dispersed and dove on their objective from a great height. With motors screaming 12 bombs in all were loosed at the target, 11 of which were direct hits on the buildings—the best display of accuracy observed since the start of hostilities.

The close of the day found observers, both military and civilian; almost unanimous in declaring

that the Chinese withdrawal to their new lines of defense was a strategic move, designed primarily to avoid costly salients and to move their forces from under the very noses of the Japanese warships whose heavy guns have been shelling them at point blank range.

September 15

The heaviest fighting of the past 24 hours has been going on in the vicinity of Lotien where the Chinese have completed a further minor withdrawal in straightening their lines. Japanese forces attempting to follow up the retreating forces were forced back across the creek at Peitang and have taken up positions on the north bank of the creek. The village of Kiangwan and the International Race Course are still in Chinese hands, although their possession leaves the Chinese in another salient from which they are expected to retreat shortly. Considerable fighting went on in the vicinity of the Eight Character Bridge with no apparent change in the disposition of the opposing forces. The North Station and Chapei section was generally quiet throughout the day.

Japanese steam launches filled with marines cruised slowly in the vicinity of Pootung Point shortly after a bombardment of the shore by the warships just before noon to give rise to another rumor that a Pootung landing would be attempted, but no such attempt was made. Pootung has been heavily shelled and bombed during the past few days and the Chinese defenders are awaiting some major move on the part of the Japanese in this sector.

The Dixwell Road area and the area near the Water Tower were shelled continuously between 8 a.m. and 10 a.m. During the day, the Japanese kept up intermittent shelling of the Kiangwan district and all of Chapei, with the Commercial Press area and the Markham Road yards coming in for the lion's share of the explosives. Chinese batteries concentrated their fire on the Landing Party Barracks. Japanese planes over Chapei today were greeted with remarkably accurate rapid-fire anti-aircraft fire.

On the whole, there was a definite lull on the entire Shanghai front today, both sides seeming to be taking a breathing spell to get firmly entrenched in new positions.

In the north, small Japanese gains were reported, the major development being the admission by the Chinese that their forces who had retaken Kalgan were again driven out by the Japanese. In the south, the first naval engagement of the war reportedly took place yesterday when, during the shelling of the Bocca Tigris Forts by Japanese warships, two Chinese naval vessels, a cruiser and a gunboat, entered the fight. Although Chinese planes aided in the battle, the forts were stated to have been silenced and the Chinese ships incapacitated.

The rain which has kept Shanghai soaked for the past few days has also evidently bogged down military operations as the whole of the Shanghai front was relatively quiet last night and today. During the night attacks were made by the Chinese troops in the North Station area, no gains being reported along the line.

The morning opened with routine operations at daybreak when four Japanese seaplanes flew over the Pootung area. They dropped 10 small bombs without encountering any ground fire and then circled lower over the Pootung Bund, evidently searching for snipers. At the lower altitude they were greeted by severe anti-aircraft fire and eventually flew off. At about the same time the seaplanes were in the air, Japanese gunboats in the river shelled the Pootung side systematically, continuing the cannonading for about two hours with their objectives deep into Pootung. At the close of the bombardment several fast steam launches left the warships for the Pootung side, each loaded with marines. They were met with concentrated rifle and machinegun fire from the Chinese along the shore line and were forced to retire.

All through the day intermittent shelling of the North Station area, north Chapei and the Kiangwan sector was carried out by Japanese batteries and warships, heavy shelling in the neighborhood of Woosung was also heard from the Settlement. The Chinese are still holding Kiangwan Race Course, according to Japanese admission, it being pointed out that the position is of no strategic value.

Chinese planes flying at a considerable altitude bombed the Japanese positions along the Yangtze last night, the Japanese claiming that all of the bombs missed their objectives. The planes were stated to have encountered strong anti-aircraft fire from the Japanese troops below. Also announced by the Japanese press spokesman was the casualty list of Japanese forces on this front from August 13 to September 13. The figures are: killed, 905; wounded 2,574. It was stressed that these figures were for the army only and did not include the Naval Landing Party's casualties.

The most important development on this front during the past 24 hours is a questionable one—the recapture of Lotien by the Chinese yesterday evening. This the Japanese deny, pointing out that Chinese planes bombed the town last night, an impossible situation if their own troops had held it.

Japanese planes raided all along the Yangtze valley yesterday, causing a panic at Kiukiang when they appeared, as the district was being evacuated because of the recent floods. Extent of the damage done by the raiders is not as yet known. At Nanking the Chinese claim to have shot down three Japanese planes which participated in a raid there yesterday.

September 16

Locally, the slack in the fighting continues with the Japanese, admittedly concentrating on the northern sector, claiming advances along lines in the Lotien sector, including the capture of the villages of Tungchia. In the Liuhong sector, the villages of Yu Cha and Chinchawan were also stated to be taken over by the advancing Japanese. Chinese sources claimed that in spite of determined attacks

by the entire Japanese lines in the northern area, the Chinese positions remained unchanged.

From 10:00 to 11:00 a.m. Japanese seaplanes bombed and machinegunned the Pootung side, observed objectives being the Kailan Mining Administration's Potung Wharf; the Arnhold Co's Godown at Pootung Point and the Hoong Shing Wharf. The planes were fired upon by machineguns, with no apparent hits being scored.

Major development of the hostilities in China for the day was the news that a Japanese offensive along a 70 mile front is in progress against the Chinese forces in the Peiping-Hankow and Tientsin-Pukow railway sector with the Chinese offering stiff resistance. Along the front, which stretches from the mountains west of the Peiping-Hankow railway to a point 30 miles west of Tientsin, the Japanese claim to have advanced nine miles as a maximum gain, five miles as a minimum. Chinese forces are reported to be in danger of being enveloped as a result of swift Japanese thrusts across the Han River. Japanese artillery, aircraft and tanks played a prominent part in the successes, which are admitted in part by the Chinese.

In the midst of all this fighting, Dr. Wellington Koo, Chinese Ambassador to France, made an eloquent address before the Assembly of the League of Nations yesterday, in which he stated that the present situation in the Far East called for the most urgent action. Dr. Koo outlined three possible courses of action open to the League.

(1) Consideration and action by the Council itself.

(2) Formal reference of the question to the Assembly.

(3) Reference of the matter to the Advisory Committee on the Sino-Japanese dispute established in 1933.

It is believed that the latter course will be the one followed and further, that the Council will ask Japan to state her case without accepting any of the obligations of the League.

September 17

Shelling by a Japanese gunboat of positions to the rear of Pootung Point was observed at 9:30 a.m., while shells were also obsewed falling northwest of the Landing Party Barracks later in the morning. During the night the heavy naval guns of the Japanese were dropping high explosives in the Kiangwan area, where the Chinese still have a wedge thrust into the Japanese lines.

Sporadic fighting was heard in the Settlement last night from the North Station area and also from the Kiangwan area but operations, particularly of the Japanese, are almost at a standstill because of the handicap the muddy terrain is to their mechanized forces. The Chinese, depending more on infantry attacks with light armaments, are at an advantage as long as this weather holds.

Heaviest fighting of this war is still in North China where the Chinese are giving the stiffest resistance to the Japanese advance. Japanese gains are reported to be small, although effective on all fronts. The Japanese left flank which reaches to within 30 miles of Tientsin has made but small gains toward its announced objective of encircling the Chinese troops. At noon yesterday the Japanese Yamada "flying column," which has reportedly advanced 400 kilometers since the capture of Nankow Pass three weeks ago, reported the capture of Laiyuang-hsien on the northwestern tip of Hopei, close to the border of Shansi and Chahar provinces. At nine this norning Japanese force captured Chochow, 40 miles from Peiping on the Pinghan Railway. Chinese casualties in opposing the Japanese motorized forces were declared to be extremely heavy.

Japanese planes have been active in North China, bombing Paotingfu, Hopei provincial capital, yesterday, in addition to routine bombing of the Chinese positions. Chinese airplanes in a squadron of three, bombed Japanese positions at Tatung yesterday and were reported to have been driven off by a Japanese counter-attack. In addition to bombing operations, Japanese planes have been active in dropping pamphlets to the troops and civilians below detailing various news of a propaganda nature.

Reports of Japanese bombardments of the city of Canton by fleets of planes last week have just reached here. The reports state that a great amount of damage was done to military objectives in spite of the resistance offered by 12 Chinese planes which took to the air in an effort to thwart the attack.

The motorship Wichita, which has been reported to have been on its way to China with a cargo of airplanes and other war material, has had its cargo unloaded at San Pedro in compliance with President Roosevelt's edict against the transportation of munitions to China or Japan in Government bottoms.

September 18

The comparative quiet which has prevailed on the Shanghai front owing to the rainy conditions the past few days was broken early this morning when a Chinese battery behind the North Station began pounding away at Japanese positions in the vicinity of the Landing Party Barracks. Japanese batteries in Hongkew took up the challenge and shelled the North Station area and Chapei generally for some time in the morning. Fires were observed burning from the shell fire in the vicinity of the Kiangwan Race Course early in the morning.

Heavy fighting also broke out last night and continued this morning all along the Lotien-Liuhong front, vicious Chinese attacks being repulsed by the Japanese with heavy losses to the attacking forces, according to the Japanese. No changes are reported on the disposition of the forces on the local front during the past 24 hours.

Chinese claim to have brought down the second Japanese plane in two days on the Lotien front yesterday by anti-aircraft fire. Other losses suffered by the Japanese airforce recently were described by an Indian watchman of a Yangtzepoo factory, who

stated that in one of the recent Chinese air raids over the Yangtzepoo sector he had witnessed the destruction on the ground of eight Japanese planes, while 10 others were badly damaged. The ruined ships were loaded on transports to be returned to Japan.

During the night sporadic rifle and machinegun fire were heard in the vicinity of the North Station. Fires were reported at 9:30 a.m. at Hodchien Road near Meichow Road; near the Civic Center; and on Tungchow Road near the north boundary of the Settlement. At noon new fires were reported at North Szechuen and Range Roads and in the vicinity of the Eight Character Bridge.

Other developments of the day on the local scene were the bustling of Shanghai residents into the Yangtzepoo area under consular passes to retrieve possessions tied up in the war zone until now. Trucking companies experienced a boom during the moving operations. The second attempt to move the yacht of Mark L. Moody from its precarious position at Pootung Point was made today and failed. The American Landing Party from the U.S.S. Augusta was forced to turn back owing to the machinegun and artillery fire at the Point. Another evidence of the struggle to return to normalcy within the Settlement was seen today with the opening of the Cathay and Palace Hotels, closed since the tragic bombings of "Bloody Saturday" which damaged both hostelries severely.

In the north the threatened enveloping of the Chinese forces in the vicinity of Chochow was reported nearly complete today with about 40,000 Chinese troops almost completely surrounded by flying Japanese columns, leaving but a small mountain pass to the west as a possible escape. The troops were stated to have been placed in their precarious position by the sudden retreat towards Paotingfu of 60,000 troops. Chinese dispatches state that the Chinese are holding their right flank along the Peiping-Hankow Railway in the face of repeated Japanese attacks. The Chinese Lt.-General Li Fu-ying, commander of the 68th Division, was reported today to be removed from command and held for trial by a military tribunal on charges of miscalculation of military tactics which caused the Chinese to lose important positions in Shansi.

The Chinese Ambassador, Dr. C. T. Wang, formally protested today to the American Secretary of State against the embargo on munitions destined for China and Japan which was announced yesterday. His protest took the view that such an action discriminated against the Chinese, since China and not Japan was dependent upon outside supplies for the continuance of the present hostilities.

September 19

The writer heard the terrible sound of a plane falling at about 7:50 last night. The plane, one of a group of Chinese raiders, was hit (miraculously it seems, in view of the ineffectiveness of the anti-aircraft fire by the Japanese night after night) by ground fire from Japanese positions and crashed in the compound of the Sung Sung Cotton Mill on Yangtzepoo Road. The pilot died shortly after the crash. The wrecked plane was a Curtis-Hawk III with a Chekiang insignia on its wings. Japanese also claimed to have downed another Chinese plane during the raid but were unable to furnish any evidence of the fact. Chinese planes raided again at midnight to the usual accompaniment of a pyrotechnic display over the Bund and Hongkew which this time proved ineffective.

The Japanese this morning sent a fleet of 35 planes to Nanking on a bombing expedition, 21 of which raided the capital while the others raided nearby positions. Four of the bombers were alleged to have been brought down by defending Chinese planes, one of the crashes being witnessed by the correspondent of a foreign news agency.

Fighting on the local front was of a desultory nature during the past 24 hours with no changes in the lines being announced. The Japanese shelled Chapei and Kiangwan heavily last night following the Chinese air raids, starting several new fires which in addition to the fires started by Chinese bombs in the Yangtzepoo area turned the Shanghai sky red with flames.

In the north the 40,000 trapped Chinese troops near Chochow escaped annihilation by a rapid retreat through a mountain pass to the west of their trap today. Although the Japanese advance has not been as rapid as has been predicted by their command, has progressed far enough to raise the question of the Chinese making a stand or relinquishing the whole of Hopei to the Japanese troops. Foreign military advices state that the Chinese have built a strong fortified line between Chengting, on the Peiping-Hankow Railway 60 miles southwest of Paoting, and a point on the Tientsin Pukow Railway south of Tsangchow.

Interesting to Americans was the arrival today of the transport Chaumont with 1435 Marine officers and men to augment the forces defending the Settlement. Of equal interest to Americans was the release of figures as to the damage sustained by Americans in Shanghai from the commencement of hostilities to August 31. Based on a careful survey of the war-torn districts, the figure was placed at U.S.$25,000,000.00, or almost half the total loss of other nationals.

September 20

Heavy fighting is still going on on the Lotien-Liuhong front with both sides claiming gains. The Japanese are reported to have attacked with forces newly reinforced from transports in the river along the Liuhong line and temporarily to have gained ground last night, only to be driven back by fierce Chinese counter-attacks which gained back ground lost in fighting several days ago. West of Lotien the Japanese claim that the Chinese are in full retreat today from positions held by them since the start of hostilities. Both sides are reported to be digging in along the line from Yanghong to Kiangwan. In Kiang-

wan the Chinese carried out a series of raids during the night from the salient which they hold in this area without however changing the lines of disposition of the forces.

The fighting lines more close to the Settlement perimeter were still quiet last night and today, with some fighting being heard in the northern Wayside sector. Some machinegun fire was heard in the vicinity of the Eight Character Bridge last night and there was heavy shelling of the North Station area between 8:00 p.m. and 9:00 p.m. The western sector was very quiet.

At 7:00 a.m. Kiangwan was being shelled and by 9:00 a.m. the shelling had shifted to the Paoshan Road district. Also at 7:00 a.m. a Japanese plane was reported to be dropping handbills over Nantao. Two fires which broke out during the night were still burning this morning and the Shanghai Fire Brigade was called to assist in extinguishing them. One was at Elgin and North Shansi Roads, the other on Broadway at Keeochong Roads.

Despite the stiff resistance reportedly encountered, Japanese troops are "advancing to plan" along the whole northern front, reports received here today indicate. The Chinese are falling back in perfect order and have even at one point recaptured a town, Hsinchi, by a sudden counter-attack. Along the Peiping-Hankow Railway Line the Chinese are preparing a last stand in Hopei at Paotingfu. With the fresh advances the Japanese are now within 30 miles of Paotingfu today but it is known that their advances are being made at a heavy cost, for a corespondent of a foreign news agency saw the roads leading back from the Japanese lines choked with trucks carrying dead and wounded Japanese troops. The Chinese are also suffering heavy losses.

An epic story of how a lone regiment held the walled town of Kuan for three days after the walls had been battered down by Japanese artillery and after being completely surrounded was revealed today. There days after the Japanese announced capture of the town, 2000 survivors of the regiment escaped.

Further reports on the raiding fleet of bombing planes which bombed Nanking and cities along the Shanghai-Nanking Railway yesterday were revealed today. Kashing, Sungkiang, Ningpo, Kashan, and Soochow were among the points bombed. At Nanking seven Japanese planes were downed and another was hit so badly that it crashed at Soochow. Three Chinese planes were downed during the raid.

The Japanese Admiral issued a warning to all civilians in Nanking to stay away from all establishments of a military nature, adding that bombing raids on a major scale would be instituted by the Japanese as from noon tomorrow.

Cholera in the Settlement and the Concession is reaching epidemic proportions with total cases announced as 433 in addition to 41 deaths.

September 21

Following the warning to Chinese civilians in Nanking yesterday and the added warning by the Japanese Admiral Hasegawa to foreign nationals to evacuate the city because of impending major air raids, the American and Italian Embassies moved quarters to their gunboats on the river and thereby provoked a storm of comment. Pointing out that American gunboats have no intention of moving from their present anchorages in the river, Washington comment goes on to say that the action of the American Ambassdor Nelson T. Johnson was prompted by a desire to avoid any such incident as that now clouding the relationships between Great Britian and Japan over the shooting of the British Ambassador.

Canton this morning was visited by more than 20 Japanese bombers who bombed the city for over two hours. They were met by anti-aircraft fire and Chinese planes went up after the raiders had finished their work to give battle. Chinese reports claim that three Japanese planes were brought down.

In the raids yesterday nine Japanese planes were brought down including one at Pootung downed by machinegun fire from the ground. The destruction of this one plane was not reported by any local paper or foreign observer and the supposition is that it fell too deep into Pootung to be seen from the Settlement.

International repercussions on the current Sino-Japanese hostilities were seen today in several directions. In regard to the air threat to Nanking, England is believed ready to make a formal protest, citing the bombardment of a civilian population as a barous method of warfare. Another foreign move took place today when the United States agreed to send a representative to the meeting scheduled for today of the League Advisory Body for consideration of the Far Eastern situation. The representative, the American Minister to Switzerland, will go with instructions to do nothing until the United States is informed as to the direction in which U.S. cooperation is desired.

Actual fighting today was severe along a five-kilometer front from Chinchia, Chiangchia, Chuchia to Yangchia with the Japanese opening an offensive at eight in the morning which by 11 a.m. had gained three kilometers. The troops fought in a downpour of rain after a strong artillery barrage by the Japanese had turned the terrain into a muddy sea. The Japanese forces all along the Lotien front are still advancing slowly tonight in the face of determined Chinese resistance.

The Kiangwan front is still quiet with the Japanese reported to have assembled a large fleet of armored trucks and tanks for an expected drive against the Chinese salient. During the night and early morning minor sporadic clashes occurred in the Paoshan Road sector and in the neighborhood of the Eight Character Bridge, with no changes reported in the lines. Japanese aircrafts were grounded during the day, although

one plane was observed engaged in reconnaissance work over Pootung. Routine shelling of Pootung and Chapei went on throughout the day with a destroyer starting off the heavy gun fire at 8.00 a.m.

Chinese planes raided during the night, coming down the Whangpoo and circling over the Japanese Consulate before proceeding down river to drop their eggs in the Yangtzepoo section. As usual they were greeted by a brilliant display of anti-aircraft fire from the warships in the river and from shore batteries. Shanghai's residents are staying up late these nights on the roofs of their apartment houses to await the show put on when the Chinese raid, as it is easily the most spectacular single event of the hostilities. Damage done by the Chinese raid of Saturday night to Japanese supplies was stated to be Y.7,000,000.00 a figure derived from a Tokio news broadcast.

Japanese army units continue to advance in the north, reaching Hsushui, 20 kilometers north of Paotingfu on the Peiping-Hankow Railway, or a gain of 10 kilometers since their positions were reported yesterday. Along the Tientsin-Pukow line, the Japanese have advaced to a point slightly north of Tsangchow. Bombing operations carried out by the Nipponese airmen supporting the troops in this area are reported to have destroyed many Chinese troop trains.

The expected air raids of Nanking materialized to day when Japanese planes made three visits to bomb China's capital city. The first squadron of 24 planes appeared over Nanking at 10:20 a.m. to bomb extensively the south section of the city. The second squadron of about the same number of planes came over at about the time the first group finished and dropped their bombs all ove rthe city. The total number of planes participating in the first raid was set by foreign observers at more than fifty. Details of the damage done on this raid are very meager. The Chinese announce that they downed four of the raiders outside the city limits.

September 22

10 Japanese planes broke through the Chinese defense cordon around the city to bomb Nanking again for an hour at 1:45 p.m. A third raid by an undetermined number of planes took place at 3:30 p.m. Communications in Nanking are disrupted and complete details of the raids are not available tonight.

The U.S.S. Luzon and the U.S.S. Guam are remaining at their berths in the river despite persistent rumors to the contrary and the American Ambassador will continue to make his headquarters on the Luzon.

Canton was again bombed this morning when two squadrons of Japanese planes dropped high explosives on the southeastern portion of the city and also in the suburban area. The first raid lasted four hours, from 2.00 a.m. to 6.00 a.m. The second was a short affair of 20 minutes from 7.00 a.m. to 7:20 a.m. Damage is reported to be heavy and loss of life among civilians is high. In addition the inhabitants are nerve-racked from loss of sleep during the past few nights.

Before the bombings of Nanking were made known to Shanghai, advice came through that the American Government through the Secretary of State Cordell Hull had made representations in Tokio against the announced intention of the Japanese to bomb the Chinese capital. The protest was based or the following grounds:

1) The bombing of non-combatant populations violated international and humanitarian laws.
2) The bombing might interfere with normal relations between China and the United States by endangering the American diplomatic representatives in Nanking.

In commenting on the protest Mr. Hull said that at the time it was made no knowledge was had of an impending similar action by Great Britain. The Japanese Government, he said, had not as yet given specific assurances in reply to the note.

Also on the international front was the appeal by China to the League of Nations which came up yesterday before the Advisory Committee. Nothing was done on the appeal yesterday, the meeting being confined to discussions of procedure. More definite action in this conflict than an appeal was the placing recently by China with the United States of an order for more than US$10,000,000.00 worth of munitions, news of which was had today. The war materials will be transported in foreign bottoms to avoid the U.S. embargo on such shipments in American ships.

Japanese forces along the Peiping-Hankow and Tientsin-Pukow lines are preparing for attacks by the Chinese which they expect will open the most sanguinary warfare yet seen in the north. This assumption is based on the fact that Japanese gains so far have been made against Chinese troops armed only with machineguns and rifles and a negligible amount of artillery, while now Nanking is expected to send heavy artillery and airplanes to the assistance of its northern armies. No significant changes were reported in the dispositions of the troops on the northern front during the past 24 hours.

Japanese successes on the Lotien-Liuhong front have still failed to dislodge the Chinese from their positions in this territory, it is evident today, as the main force of the Japanese attack was changed to bear on Kiangwan Village and northern Chapei. Their forces hammered away at these positions all night and day with no significant gains being reported. Throughout the day Japanese batteries pounded away at the Pootung Chinese and at Chapei, with the Chinese batteries in the neighborhood of the Markham Road Yards and those in Pootung replying. The writer observed one battery of Chinese guns about 200 yards north of the Markham Road yards fire at Hongkew and Wayside during the morning. After each series of salvos from the battery a Japanese observing plane would come over and spot its location and direct the fire of the Japanese batteries to the point.

After the plane left and before the Japanese batteries would start firing the Chinese were observed moving the battery a hundred yards or so this way or that to open up from their new position. While they were shooting the Japanese would with remarkable accuracy shell the spot from which the battery had just moved. This went on all morning.

September 23

The local front was relatively quiet through the night and during the day with one important battle being fought between Liuhong and Tazang as the Japanese attempted to break through the Chinese lines and force a further retirement of the Chinese forces. At last reports the Chinese are still holding their lines here as well as at all other points on the Shanghai front despite extensive use of artillery by the Japanese.

During the late morning and around noon Japanese destroyers lying off the O.S.K. Wharf were pumping shells into the area behind the Shanghai-Hongkew Pootung Wharf. At 1 p.m. Japanese warships farther down the Whangpoo started an hour's shelling of the Pootung side in the neighborhood of the China Merchants Eastern Wharf. Intermittent shelling of Chapei went on all through the day.

Japanese aircraft were more active today on the local front than they have been for many days, starting their activities with an early morning raid near Tazang during which they dropped about 30 bombs. At 2:30 p.m. 10 Japanese army planes were observed flying off into the northwest, presumably to bomb the Chinese defense lines near Liuho. At about the same time a seaplane dropped two bombs near the Pootung cemetery. On the whole the rain seems to be hampering operations of both sides and fighting on this front is in a lull period.

In the north the fall of Fengchen, the point at which the Peiping-Suiyuan Railway crosses the Chahar border into Suiyuan, was admitted by the Chinese today. The statement lauds the Chinese troops who gave up the city after holding out for several days against troops with superior equipment supported by heavy artillery. Chinese defense lines in the vicinity of Paotingfu are reported to be unchanged with the Japanese forces throwing everything they have into an attempt to dislodge the defenders of the Hopei capital. The attacking Japanese are reported to be making small gains along the Great Wall on the northeastern tip of Hopei with the plan of preventing the retreat of the Chinese in Paotingfu. Gains are also reported on the front south of Tientsin.

September 24

Shelling of the Pootung side by Japanese warships with the Tien Cheng Paper Mills as their objective, was started late last night and continued this morning. The mills were demolished but the loss of life is stated to be small. The Paoshan Road district was also shelled between eight and nine a.m. and during the next hour the attention of the big guns was turned on the Commercial Press district. Machinegun fire of a sporadic nature was audible in this area during the night and early morning as Japanese attacked but the lines were reported unchanged. The warships in the river also used machineguns during the morning with the fire directed at the Pootung shore, presumably at snipers. Results were not announced. Fires were observed in the neighborhood of the Far Eastern Race Course during the day.

Last night at midnight a Chinese plane turned up over the Whangpoo to cruise around for 15 minutes without apparently dropping any bombs. The Japanese again turned on their full force of anti-aircraft fire at the visitor without result. It was announced that the fleet of Japanese planes which took off from Shanghai to give Nanking an air raid scare yesterday turned up at Kiangyin, a strong Chinese fortification on the Yangtze, and bombed the stronghold for an hour, damaging the forts and Chinese naval units tied up nearby.

Fighting on the Liuho front has evidently settled down to a long drawn-out affair with the Japanese making repeated attacks on the Chinese lines and the Chinese holding them off. Losses on both sides during the fighting of the past 24 hours are admittedly heavy. The expected attack along the Kiangwan front has not materialized as yet, the observers have noted increased reinforcements in both men and motorized equipment in this district for the past two days and expect an atttack at any moment.

Paotingfu in the north is reported to be almost completely surrounuded, with attacks on the 40,000 defenders being made from the north, and south and west by a Japanese force stated to number about 8,000 men. Along the Tientsin-Pukow line the Japanese have started a major offensive on Tsangchow.

Late this evening reports came through of the bombing of Canton this morning at six by a small squadron of Japanese naval planes. In the same communication was news of the bombing of the military airdrome at Nanchang yesterday at 6:00 p.m. during the course of which several buildings were destroyed.

It was revealed today that the signatories of the Nine-Power Pact have been exchanging information on the Sino-Japanese situation but that no action is planned for a number of reasons, chief of which is the fact that the pact has no teeth by which its provisions could be enforced. Also enumerated as reasons why the Powers could do nothing tangible were the facts that their widely divergent views made cooperation almost impossible and that the certain refusal of Japan to attend any conference would complicate any situation.

In London at midnight last night police reserves had to be called out to disperse a crowd of over 200 demonstrators who paraded in front of the residence of the Japanese Ambassador with shouts of "Take the Japanese murderers away from China," and "Withdraw your bombers." Leading French newspapers published articles yesterday condemning the policies of the Japanese in China.

September 25

Japanese bombing planes had a field day yesterday as they rained death and destruction on many objectives. The scenes they left behind in Hankow after an afternoon and an evening raid may well become the basis of an international incident as Britain has already called for explanations on the bombings of Canton and Nanking, during which the civilian casualties were much less severe. The bombs of the Japanese at Hankow landed in a slum district of the city in which 10,000 of the poorest residents reside and converted the area into a shambles. Deaths are known to be heavy but so many of the victims were blown to bits or buried beneath the crumbled masonary of the shattered homes in which they were huddled that an accurate casualty list is not yet available.

While a portion of their air arm was busy at Hankow the Japanese dispatched another squadron of 29 planes to Nanking this morning, ignoring the protests of the United States and Great Britain. 14 of the raiders appeared at 9:50 to be met with unusually accurate anti-aircraft fire which caused one of the planes to burst into flame and plunge to the ground. All of the bombs were dropped in the south section of the city and the planes departed. 10 Chinese pursuit planes were in the air to give battle. As soon as the first flight had cleared the city another flight of fifteen planes appeared to bomb the same area. As before, the anti-aircraft fire brought down one of the bombers soon after it had come over the city.

Locally the clearing weather brought out the Japanese planes in force and they bombed constantly throughout the day. The North Station-Paoshan Road Water Tower sector came in for the greatest amount of attention on the part of the planes, but four bombs were also dropped in Pootung by a seaplane at 3.00 p.m. The Chapei forces directed spirited anti-aircraft fire at the Japanese with no evident result on the planes. One anti-aircraft shell which exploded at Gordon and Bubbling Well Roads wounded four Chinese. Another at Peking and Fokien Roads at about the same time, 8:30 a.m., injured five. The total of the casualties list from anti-aircraft fire within the Settlement for the day was 14.

Chinese batteries shelled the Dixwell Road area during the night and the Japanese shelled the Paoshan Road sector in reply. From 9.00 a.m. to 10.00 a.m. shells from Japanese batteries were falling all over Chapei as five separate areas seemed to be objectives of the gunners. A Japanese destroyer threw seven shells into the N.Y.K. Pootung Wharf buildings in the early part of the afternoon without drawing any reply from the Chinese batteries in Pootung. Japanese batteries were heavily shelling Chinese positions in the Liuhong area throughout the night and morning.

Early this morning the writer from a vantage point on a high building on the Settlement perimeter witnessed the detonation of a series of land mines along the Yanghong-Liuhong motor road. The explosions threw up tremendous clouds of smoke and debris, each separate explosion being many times greater than that of the largest aerial bombs so far seen. This afternoon came word that a marching column of Japanese along with eight armored cars was trapped by the mines and cut to pieces, 300 being killed out of 500 in the detail. Chinese attacked the remnants with machinegun and rifle fire and inflicted many more casualties.

Japanese casualties on this front up to September 21 were announced as 5581 with 4169 of that number being wounded. Also announced by the Japanese was the total of 284 Chinese planes shot down or destroyed on the ground on the local front while Canton lost 36 planes in the three days from September 19-22. In all, the Japanese losses in aircraft have been but 31 planes.

Despite intermittent fighting and skirmishes on the Liuhong and Kiangwan fronts no changes in the lines were reported today. Chinese troops blew up the Ichang Road Bridge 11:45 this morning after first notifying the Municipal authorities and newsreel cameramen. The bridge is a wooden structure spanning Soochow Creek between the Settlement and Chinese territory near the Government Mint. No explanations were given for the act.

Paotingfu was reported captured by the Japanese after a successful encircling movement yesterday, but the Chinese claim to have recaptured the strategic capital of Hopei after a series of counter-attacks. Alng the Peiping-Suiyuan and Tientsin-Pukow Railway fronts the Chinese report major victories during the past 24 hours, capturing 2000 Japanese troops and a large amount of equipment and inflicting heavy casualties. Chinese losses in men were also stated to be heavy.

The Navy Department at Washington issued a statement today to the effect that the American Naval units now stationed in China waters will remain here until the cessation of hostilities. The statement set at rest rumors which have had the American residents in China left without protection. Pertinent portions of the paper are here given:

> *"Most Americans now in China are engaged in business or professions which are their only means of livelihood. They are unwilling to leave until their business has been destroyed or actual physical danger compels them to depart."*
>
> *"Until such time our naval forces cannot be withdrawn without failure in our duty and without bringing great discredit on the United States Navy."*

September 26

Startling today to Shanghai business and to governmental representatives all over China was the announcement that the Japanese have taken over the Customs operations in the Yangtzepoo district since September 12. The point raised is mostly a technical one since the committee formed for the work has not as yet started to function and in any case the regular Shanghai Customs is still functioning on the Bund in areas over which the Japanese have not assumed

jurisdiction. It was pointed out that only Japanese ships are using the Yangtzepoo docks and none of them have brought in any merchandise as yet. However, any interference with customs revenues which form the collateral for most of the foreign loans to China is bound to raise international complications.

With Chapei relatively quiet, fierce fighting was again raging along the Lotien-Liuhong front this morning as Japanese troops, apparently recently reinforced from transports in the river, stormed Chinese positions along the Tiehchin Creek under cover of heavy artillery and succeeded in forcing a crossing of the creek. Chinese are reported to be giving strong resistance and to have counter-attacked at this point and driven the Japanese back to the creek where fighting was still going on tonight.

Heavy fighting along the Liuhong and Kiangwan fronts produced short gains for the Japanese which were nullified by the Chinese when counter-attacks drove the Japanese back to their original positions. Kiangwan and Chapei were heavily shelled last night and throughout today with Chinese batteries occasionally replying. Japanese warships shelled Pootung last night and drew fire from the Pootung batteries.

Japanese planes constantly raided Chapei and Pootung this morning, dropping many bombs. The Chinese airforce sent over a squadron believed to number three planes at 10:35 p.m. which penetrated the usually heavy anti-aircraft fire to drop bombs in the Yangtzepoo area and start large fires. Another raid by a lone plane was conducted at 1:35 a.m. along the same lines and this plane also got away without suffering disablement.

Fires from shalls and bombs were observed last night and this morning in the vicinity of the North Station and also in the Markham Road area.

Japanese planes raided Canton three times during last night with the amount of damage done and lives lost not as yet known.

Japanese troops in China are continuing their thrust along all fronts and are expected to encounter the main line of Chinese defense south of the present battle lines sometime in the near future. After reaching this line the Japanese, it is believed, will consolidate their gains and await reinforcements in men and equipment before pushing on. Their troops are about to cross the Yellow River into Shantung and the attitude of General Han Fu-chu, Governor of Shantung, is expected to play a decisive part in the troop movements from now on in the north.

Japan sent her reply today to the League of Nations declining the invitation to participate in the deliberations of the Advisory Committee on the Sino-Japanese current hostilities. In the note Japan stated that she was doing everything in her power to liquidate the problem in accordance with her policy of dealing with the realities of the situation and further saw no reason for altering her stand as to the deliberations of the League.

September 27

Large fires were burning in Canton today as three separate raids were carried out during the night and early morning by Japanese planes. The 13 raiders bombed points along the Canton-Hankow Railway in an effort to tie up traffic, in addition to dropping several bombs in the city. Nanking had two air raid alarms this morning but scarcely saw the Japanese planes which bombed Chinese naval vessels off Pakwachow, 15 miles down river in the first raid, and points on the Pukow Railway in the second. Chinese planes went up to engage the raiders but it is not known whether any of the Japanese were brought down.

Another tragedy with hundreds of deaths to civilians was brought to light today when the Scharnhorst arrived in Hongkong with 10 Chinese picked up at sea who claimed to be the sole surivors of a fleet of 12 Chinese fishing junks bombarded by a Japanese submarine off Cheeklongkau Point on September 22. 100 women and children are reported to have lost their lives in addition to 200 men when the submarine shelled junk after junk.

Reported today also was the civilian death list for this area during the month from August 12 to September 12. The total was given as 1700 with places and dates cited. Not mentioned in the reports were deaths from wounds received within the International Settlement.

Fighting in the local area started early today and continued all through the morning as Japanese planes droned over all sections of Chapei to drop their bombs in many widely separated areas. The planes were fired upon by Chinese anti-aircraft guns but no hits were observed to have been made. The attacks followed a prolonged artillery barrage laid down on the district last night by Japanese batteries.

Kwangtung Road and the Shanghai-Woosung Railway line were bombed and shelled from 10:00 a.m. through the early afternoon. During the routine shelling of Chapei throughout the day a high explosive shell penetrated the roof of the Sung Sing No. 9 Cotton Godown on west Soochow Road near Ichang Road, injuring no one. Three Chinese however were reported injured by falling fragments of anti-aircraft shells within the Settlement. The shelling of the Commercial Press area became quite heavy between 3:00 p.m. and 4:00 p.m. Pootung was shelled during the afternoon.

The Japanese push against the Kiangwan-Liuhong line was believed to have begun last night when severe attacks were made against the Chinese troops in the vicinity of Kiangwan Village. Reporting no gains, the Japanese deny that attacks were a part of a large offensive, stating that they were waiting for clearer weather and drier ground on which to use their mechanized equipment. Chinese forces report minor gains near Liuhong with the capture of the Yungan-chiao Bridge and two small villages for a net gain of

about one kilometer. Lines in the Liuho sector are believed to be in the same positions as yesterday.

In the north the Japanese offensive appears to be still advancing with the capture today of Tsangchow after a stiff defense of the town by the Chinese.

China on September 25 sent a note to the People's Commissariat of Foreign Affairs in Moscow protesting against the aerial bombardment of "peaceful populations, refugees, Red Cross detachments and cultural institutions by the Japanese aggressor." The note, which was made public today, embodied a request that Russia take such steps as advisable to "assist in bringing about a speedy termination of such uncultured and inhuman actions." Yesterday the Soviet Foreign Office delivered a note to Tokio in which she warned the Japanese that the Soviet Embassy in Nanking would remain there and that Japan would be held responsible for "any consequence of these illegal acts."

September 28

"In the name of humanity as well as in the interests of justice to my country and the peace of the world I hope that this Committee will not let the main issues be lost in the labyrinth of confusion but will act speedily as well as effectively."

"If it cannot prevent the ruthless slaughter of innocent men, women and children and the wanton destruction of property by illegal, inhuman methods of aerial bombardment, it can at least make clear where its own sentiments are so as to reinforce the universal demand of the civilized world for its immediate abandonment."

These were the main themes in Dr. Wellington Koo's stirring address to the Advisory Committee of the League just before the Committee passed a resolution condemning Japan's action in bombing upon Chinese towns and endangering Chinese civilians. Most of the other delegates made short speeches following that of Dr. Koo in which they voiced the opinion of their respective countries against the bombing. The Advisory Committee will now place the resolution before the main assembly for a vote.

Chinese troops composed in part of the transformed Red Army, now the Eighth Route Army, are reported to be advancing northward in northern Shansi after having scored marked success along the Lingchiu-Kwangling highway. Their objective is Yangkao on the Peiping-Suiyuan Railway from which point they will able to cut off the contact of the Japanese troops at Tatung with their rear. Japanese troops aided by ground-strafing planes are reported advancing along the Tzuya river while other detachments are driving hard southwest of Tsangchow along the Tientsin-Pukow railway.

In Chapei the Jukong Road area near the Woosung Railway line was the target of four bombs dropped by two Japanese planes at 10:28. At the same time the area was being heavily shelled. Between noon and 1:00 p.m. the same area was bombed again, six missiles being dropped this time and the area was again the objective of Japanese batteries which also shelled other districts in east and north Chapei. At 2:40 p.m. 12 bombs were dropped near North Szechuen and Paoshan Roads by Japanese planes which then turned north and dropped two more bombs near the Sikh Gurdwara. The planes were greeted by anti-aircraft fire which did them no damage.

Shelling of Chapei went on all through the afternoon and evening, the Japanese batteries seemingly indiscriminately raining high-explosives on the whole district and hoping for the best in the way of effective hits. No change in the disposition of the forces on the lines along Chapei was observed or reported.

The most severe bombing in the Shanghai area however was carried out by a squadron of Japanese planes over the Markham Road railway yards where the writer observed over 40 bombs dropped before darkness set in and put an end to air activities in that section. Several fires were started. At 6:00 a.m. a squadron of Japanese planes raided the Lunghua Airdrome and Pootung, dropping many bombs.

Some bombing of the Kiangwan and Liuhong areas by Japanese planes was observed during the day and severe shelling of that front went on throughout the night and day. Stating that the Chinese now have 500,000 men on the various fronts, the Japanese press spokesman today said that the food supply problem for such a force was now becoming acute and that the Japanese airmen were directing their efforts for the most part on supply lines. The disposition of the forces along the northern and eastern fronts in this theater of war remain unchanged.

The writer and a staff member of the *Shanghai Evening Post & Mercury* left Shanghai at 8:20 a.m. today for a trip through Kiangsu, Chekiang, Kiangsi and Anhwei province.

September 29

Shanghai's residents were awakened by a terrific blast at dawn today as the Chinese made another attempt to sink the Idzumo. The explosion was that of a huge mine which the troops in Pootung had floated down river and set off by means of an electrical connection. Unfortunately for their plans and luckily for the Idzumo the mine fouled on the protective netting around the Japanese flagship and exploded some 200 yards away from the ship. Following the explosion every Japanese warship in the river threw shells into Pootung as fast as their gunners could load the guns while the Chinese replied with their batteries in Pootung and Chapei and machine-guns and rifles along the shoreline. The battle went on for about an hour, shaking all of Shanghai and making a return to sleep impossible.

Following the artillery duel on the river six Japanese bombers appeared over Chapei and dropped 36 bombs on the Paoshan Road-North Station-Commercial Press area, being greeted with exceptionally heavy anti-aircraft fire from the Chinese troops in the area. As soon as they had gone others appeared

to take their place and the whole area was bombed without a break until shortly after noon. The operations appeared to be a prelude to ground operations in which the Japanese claimed to have advanced to within one half mile of the North Station.

In the afternoon a squadron of 27 Japanese bombers dropped their eggs all over the western portion of Chapei and anti-aircraft fire from the vicinity of the Markham Road yards was severe. Shelling of this area went on all afternoon and evening and several fires in addition to those observed since yesterday were seen to start.

During the whole day heavy artillery fire along the Liuhong front was plainly heard in the Settlement, becoming very severe between 3:00 p.m. and 4:00 p.m. Japanese planes were active in this area and the Chinese assert that the whole day's operation was a prelude to the much-heralded and much-reported "big push." Chinese outposts and flying columns have reported concentrations of supplies and men near the Japanese positions. As yet, however, the Chinese are holding the newly recaptured ground of yesterday and no moves by either party have been made.

An Italian sentry stationed at the Soochow Creek boundary line today fired on a boat containing returning flour mill workers after allegedly having warned them to stop. One of the workers was seriously wounded and another received a painful injury. An inquiry is being made.

An Inner Mongolian column yesterday drove Chinese troops from the important town of Taoling on the Suiyuan front and occupied Chinese positions. They are reported to be pursuing the Chinese troops. Five Japanese planes bombed Hsuchow in Kiangsu Province yesterday with the object of destroying military trains and a munitions depot.

Gains were reported all along the line in the Tientsin-Pukow, Peiping-Hankow and north Shansi sectors by the Chinese troops. The restoration of telegraphic connections between southern points on the railway and Paotingfu was also reported, indicating that the city is again in Chinese hands although the situation there is not clear.

September 30

Delayed reports came into Canton today of the bombing on September 26 of the town of Tsingyuan north of Canton on the Canton-Hankow railway. About 200 residents were killed in the bombing of the town.

Also bombed yesterday was the region around Whangpao by two Japanese planes. The damage done was not reported upon. Two Japanese planes were brought down in Chekiang province yesterday by anti-aircraft fire following raids and another was seen to fall near Soochow. Hoihow on Hainan Island was raided again yesterday by a lone Japanese plane despite the French protests on the grounds of the nearness of the island to French possessions.

Dispelling doubts which have been entertained regarding his stand in the present hostilities General Han Fu-chu, Governor of Shantung, came out today with a lengthy statement asserting his loyalty to the Central Government and his resistance to Japan. It had been thought in view of Japanese statements in regard to an alleged visit to General Han by Major-General Doihara, "Lawrence of Manchuria," that the Shantung governor might avoid an invasion of his province by acceding to Japanese plans to form an autonomous federation of the five northern provinces of Chahar, Hopei, Shansi, Suiyuan and Shantung. The general, however, set all this at rest in his statement in which he pledged his loyalty in the "struggle for existence of the Chinese people."

One of the heaviest artillery engagements of the hostilities on the local front so far started this morning and went on through the day as Chinese and Japanese batteries exchanged fire on the Kiangwan-Chapei front. 20 of the Japanese warships in the river were observed firing into Paoshan Road and the North Station area as Chinese gunners shelled Hongkew and the Rifle Range in reply. Chinese ground troops are reported to have captured the Ah Kuo Girls' School, a Japanese stronghold on the Kiangwan front, by a concerted attack with rifles and machineguns this morning. Japanese planes bombed the whole of the Chapei and Kiangwan sectors throughout the day, devoting the major part of their attention to the North Station-Paoshan Road area and dropping so many bombs by evening that observers lost count. Chinese positions in the area were reported intact this evening however.

Chinese lines in the Lotien district stretching from Mengwan near Liuhong to northwest of Lotien were reported intact at the close of the day despite strenuous attempts by the Japanese to penetrate them under cover of artillery fire and aerial bombardment.

At 8:00 a.m. Japanese planes bombed Tangchiao in Pootung and an hour later three bombers which had been bombing near Jessfield Park circled over Nantao before machinegunning the Nantao Bund in the neighborhood of Tungkadoo. At 10:00 a.m. more bombs were dropped in the vicinity of the Pootung Electric Works. Fires were observed in the Kiangwan district in the morning.

With So-hsien and Fanszehsien captured, the Japanese have penetrated deep into Shansi and are still advancing. Chinese resistance is said to be stiff and the losses on both sides heavy. On the Tsinpu line the Chinese have dug in following their retreat and are holding off the Japanese. The rapid advance of the Japanese on all northern fronts in the past few days seem to have been checked.

October 1

Fierce fighting went on throughout last night with the Chinese grimly holding on to their new gains in the vicinity of the Ah Kuo Girls' School in the face of Japanese assaults and heavy artillery fire. During the morning Chinese troops are reported to have advanced 1000 yards toward the Japanese stronghold at the Civic Center after meeting with practically

no resistance. Fighting in the Lotien and Liuhong areas was severe last night with small arms and artillery fire participating, but no changes in the lines were reported until this morning when the Japanese forces are stated to have completely occupied Liuhong and, further north, to have advanced 500 yards toward Kating through a line of concrete pillboxes.

Casualty lists given to the press today by the Japanese spokesman showed 20,000 Chinese dead and 35,000 wounded up to September 27 while Japanese army losses were stated to be 1893 dead and 5637 wounded. No figures were given for the Naval Landing Party.

Shelling by both sides of areas near the Settlement continued throughout the day. Japanese big guns in the Civic Center were active during the night and early morning but were silent during the rest of the day. Other Japanese batteries shelled Chinese positions in the Paoshan Road-North Station section and also dropped explosives on the Markham Road area while Chinese batteries pounded away at the Japanese positions in the Civic Center and around the Naval Landing Party Barracks. Some Chinese shells were also dropped on Range Road.

Aerial activities started early again today when three Japanese seaplanes bombed Pootung at Yangkadoo at 5:30 a.m. and circled over Nantao before returning to their base. Chapei in the vicinity of Paoshan Road was bombed continually during the morning, giving credence to the reported gains by Chinese troops during the night in this area. Fires which were started by these bombs this morning are still burning tonight. Whole squadrons of Japanese aircraft were observed to be bombing the Tazang-Nanziang sector throughout the day and some bombing was also observed in the Kiangwan sector. The bombing in the Tazang sector was particularly severe and is supposed to have been directed at Chinese supply lines and reserve positions.

Japanese planes yesterday raided Whangpoa and dropped several bombs on China's West Point. In the harbor severe small vessels are reported to have been damaged.

North China is still seeing the steady advance of Japanese troops on most fronts. Chinese forces along the Tientsin-Pukow railway lines have fallen back in the face of strong Japanese mechanized attacks and now have retired their first line of defense from Tungkwang to Sunyuan on the Shantung-Hopei border. Reinforcements for the Chinese are pouring into the district and the Japanese have temporarily abandoned the offensive to await further reinforcements of their own. At Pinghsinkwan Pass the Chinese are reported to be holding their own. Japanese troop concentrations at this point on the Shansi-Hopei border were bombed by 30 Chinese planes yesterday and suffered many casualties in addition to loss of heavy artillery and tanks. Chinese planes were also active at other places on this line indicating that Nanking has dispatched an effective air force to the aid of its northern troops.

Stating that Japan wants neither foreign mediation nor the convocation of a conference to deal with the present hostilities, important pronouncements by the Tokio Foreign Office today said that Japan is determined to "fight to the bitter end, until China reconsiders her attitude and drastically alters her anti-Japanese policy." Also noted today on the international scene was the growing movement toward boycott of Japanese goods. New Zealand dock workers have refused to move Japanese goods; industrial and commercial circles in Australia are launching a boycott against Japanese goods; official London frowns upon a government boycott while private organizations already have enforced such a step; and the movement is generally gaining ground throughout the world.

At the same time as the Japanese Government issued a statement to Great Britain protesting against the "exaggerations" in the British press in regard to Japanese bombings and the shelling of Chinese junks near Hongkong, in which statement the Japanese claimed that photographs published of the latter incident were fabrications, a Japanese news report was issued detailing the shelling and capture of a small Japanese launch by Chinese fishing junks near Hongkong. Investigation into the shelling of the junks by a Japanese submarine on September 22 in which scores lost their lives is proceeding and observers in Shanghai point to the news dispatch of today as affording an excuse for the previous action.

October 2

Chinese hopes for a successful campaign in northern Shansi, after the reports of successes by the newly embodied Communist troops under General Chu Teh, have been rudely shattered as Japanese forces penetrated the Great Wall and captured Taichow, but 80 miles north of Taiyuan, yesterday. The fall of Taiyuan, capital of the province, is expected hourly.

While Japanese reports continue to state that General Han Fu-chu, governor of Shantung Province, is "on the fence" some consolation is afforded patriotic Chinese today with reports of gains made by their troops in Hopei along the Tsinpu line. The Chinese are reported to have captured Fangchiakou and Potowchen, just south of Tsangchow, yesterday and to be continuing their advance.

In the south further destruction of Chinese junks by Japanese naval guns is reported today with 9 junks sunk and a death list of 150 fishermen. Two other groups of junks are reported sunk with no details given as to the skilled and wounded.

Fighting in Shanghai entered its eighth week today with the Japanese still pounding away at the Chinese lines and no major gains reported. Japanese forces preceded by tanks started a thrust from the north end of North Szechuen Road last night but the Chinese defenders blocked their westward advance after a bitter fight. Chinese reports insist today that Japanese forces are retiring from their Kiangwan-Civic Center lines toward the Whangpoo and that the

Chinese forces are following and occupying the villages abandoned by the Japanese. Along the Yangtze the Japanese are still pushing toward Kating, west of Lotien, with the Chinese holding their lines despite pounding by artillery and aerial bombs. Japanese forces have advanced 700 yards on the Liuhong front as the first move in a general offensive, according to the Japanese spokesman. Shelling in this area was severe all through the night and day.

Occasional shelling throughout the whole of the Chapei area was reported throughout the day with Kiangwan also coming in for attention on the part of the Japanese batteries. Chinese batteries in Pootung and around the North Station shelled Hongkew and the Japanese positions near the Civic Center during the night and morning and were shelled by Japanese warships and shore batteries in reply, with the brunt of the artillery attack being born by Pootung. Fires were observed to be started by shell fire near the Japanese School on Urh-yang Road and near the Arsenal in Nantao.

From early morning until noon three very large Japanese monoplanes aided by smaller bombing planes dropped nearly 100 bombs in the vicinity of Tazang. Other Japanese planes bombed Chinese positions in the North Station-Paoshan Road-Pantheon Theater district unceasingly all day.

October 3

Two major battles are raging on the Shanghai front today as Chinese and Japanese fight along the Lotien-Liuhong lines and along the North Station-Paoshan Road line. Rifle and machinegun fire have been constant in these areas all last night and throughout the day with both sides in addition throwing heavy artillery into the conflict. At last reports the Chinese are still holding their essential lines although small gains were reported for both forces along the northern front. No changes whatsoever are reported near the North Station and none in the Kiangwan area where the Chinese are resting following the Japanese withdrawal.

Shelling of Chapei which has become a routine affair each day reached out for new victims today when Japanese batteries dropped 18 shells into the Pootoo Road district of the Settlement at 5:30 a.m. before correcting their range. The area is under the control of the U.S. Marines, none of whom were injured. Several Chinese civilians were hit by flying shrapnel.

Chinese planes raided five times during last night and Shanghai was treated to a display of anti-aircraft fire that was almost continuous from 7:00 p.m. until 2:00 a.m. and was easily the most spectacular seen during the present hostilities. The planes dropped several bombs in the Yangtzepoo district and one of the fires started was still burning this morning but died out during the day.

October 4

Severe fighting along all Shanghai fronts is still going on today as the attacks launched by the Japanese yesterday continued through last night with no slacking up being noted by tonight. Along the Lotien-Liuhong front the Chinese have dropped back approximately 1000 yards to a new line west of the Shanghai-Taichong highway where they are reported to be holding their own for the time being. Japanese forces in this area are reported to be utilizing the full force of their superior equipment, including tanks, heavy artillery and airplanes, with the Chinese desperately holding on mainly by virtue of a larger force equipped with small arms, although they have used some artillery.

Fighting along the Kiangwan front broke out late yesterday and continued through the night and day, testifying that the Chinese report of a Japanese withdrawal to new lines near Woosung was incorrect. The Chinese in this area claim to have made small gains to the vicinity of the Race Course with the Japanese dropping back to the Civic Center. Heavy fighting which has been going on constantly on the eastern and northern Chapei fronts has produced no changes in the situation there.

Commenting on the fighting of the past 24 hours the Japanese press spokesman today stated that the Chinese would have retired to their second line of defense, the Lotien-Taziang line, by October 10, even though the Chinese had announced that they did not expect a major Japanese offensive on this front until October 15.

Heavy shelling of Chapei by Japanese batteries has continued all through the past 24 hours with no let up. The principal objectives seem to be the North Station-Paoshan Road section and the Cantonese Cemetery west of the North Station. Heavy cannonading was heard in the Liuhong district and in the vicinity of Tazang. Japanese batteries also pounded away at Pootung during the morning. Chinese batteries did extensive shelling of the Hongkew and North Szechuen Road districts and machineguns on the Pootung shore rattled away at the Japanese warships and the Yangtzepoo side during the artillery exchange of the morning.

Japanese planes in flights of three bombed Chapei constantly during the day and started many fires. The bombing of Chapei is becoming such a daily routine operation with so many bombs being dropped that the earlier attempts by the writer to chronicle the number of raids and the bombs dropped will have to be abandoned because the count is impossible to keep. The main forces of the Japanese air arm bombarded Tazang from late in the morning until dusk, raising huge clouds of dust and smoke but starting no fires. The Japanese state that their forces are within three kilometers of Tazang which forms a strategic point on the Chinese second defense line stretching through Kating to Lotien.

A lone Chinese raider was reported over the Whangpoo at 1:30 a.m. and was fired upon by the Japanese anti-aircraft guns. No bombs were observed to have been dropped by the Chinese plane.

With Techow, captured yesterday, as the new base of operations the Japanese are advancing steadily and driving a wedge into Shantung. In north Shansi Chinese troops that were forced to retreat through the Yenmen Pass on September 28 are reported to have counter-attacked and recaptured the town of Sohsien after a battle in which 200 of the Japanese troops were captured. Chinese successes are still being reported from Hopei, fresh reinforcements adding to the momentum of the troops which have now reached a point quite near to Paotingfu. In the western part of the province, a Japanese unit of 1000 is reported to have been cut off and defeated along the Tientsin-Pukow line and the Chinese are now pressing northward from Sunyuan.

Shanghai Americans are agog over the news that 20 Americans were removed from the "Chenonceaux" in Kobe and refused permission to proceed to Shanghai. Accounts of the happening were brought to Shanghai when the ship docked here with passengers of other nationalities and one American woman, who hid under a bed to avoid detention. Stories of force implied during the removal of the Americans from the ship by the presence of Japanese gendarmes were especially resented by local Americans.

In Tokio 45,000 Japanese Episcopalians signed a petition forwarded to the Archbishop of Canterbury protesting against the announced plan of his presiding over a meeting of protest in London against the Japanese bombings of open Chinese cities. The petition stated that the proposed move was deplored because it would rely only on Chinese reports and could not thus be impartial.

October 5

One of the most bitter fights to take place along the Shanghai area, raging along the east Chapei front, is taking place today. Heavy artillery is booming constantly and the rifle and machinegun spattering is continuous. The fighting has been going on since last night and the Japanese claim to have advanced to San Yi Tee, a residential terrace on the east side of the Shanghai-Woosung railway tracks. Other than this advance the Japanese are being held back in their determined push by a strong Chinese defense.

Japanese bombers cruised over Chapei all day dropping heavy bombs in all sections of the Chinese city. Batteries of Japanese guns laid down the heaviest artillery barrage this section has so far seen in these hostilities. Because so many of the shells and bombs are dropping so far back of the Chinese advance posts it is believed that the Japanese are working on the Chinese lines of communication and resting places of the reserve troops. Some of the shells and bombs were dropping uncomfortably close to the U.S. Marine sector near the Markham Road Yards and one shell went through a flour mill on west Soochow Road within the Marine lines.

The warships in the river are aiding shore batteries in the shelling of Chapei and Chinese batteries in Pootung and west Chapei are shelling the river district and the North Szechuen Road area in reply. The Settlement is today definitely within the fighting zone of a major battle and the troops guarding the perimeter are almost constantly under fire as stray shells, bullets and pieces of shrapnel fly over and into their positions. But one casualty, a minor one to a British Fusilier, was noted during the day as the troops kept well under cover.

Heavy artillery fire was also noted almost constantly during the past 24 hours on the Lotien-Liuhong front and the rattle of small arms fire on the Kiangwan front was audible in the Settlement at times. Despite the pounding on these fronts by Japanese artillery, tanks, airplanes and infantry the Chinese are still holding their lines. Today must be the start of the much-announced "big push" on this front by the Japanese.

Chinese sources emphatically deny that the Japanese have captured the town of Tehchow in northern Shantung, pointing out that fierce fighting is still raging north of the town. In Shansi after demolishing the army headquarters by a series of air raids the Japanese are pushing steadily forward, driving the combined units of the regular army and Communist enlistments southward before them. The dryer terrain is aiding the mechanized forces of the Japanese in their attacks.

Heralding the efforts of the Japanese to form a new autonomous government in the Peiping and Tientsin areas several thousand Manchukuo troops appeared today at Peiyuan outside Peiping. This is the first time that native Manchukuo troops have been used by the Japanese for any purposes other than those of a minor nature, such as railway guards.

The Sino-Committee of Thirteen in Brussels broke up after deliberations had proceeded to such an extent that it was deemed advisable to ask the Drafting Committee to meet and arrange the text. Rumors of the actions to be taken are many, but tomorrow the accurate text should be given.

October 6

Three separate manifestations of world disapproval of the Japanese policy in China in these hostilities were evidenced yesterday. The League Committee of Thirteen passed a resolution on the Far Eastern problem providing for:

(1) Moral support to China.

(2) A recommendation that all measures which might hamper China's rights for self defense be avoided.

(3) Individual measures for assistance to China to be devised by each member of the League individually.

Although Poland, Switzerland and Canada abstained from voting because of lack of time in which to communicate with their respective governments, the measure was passed unanimously and now passes to the main assembly for action. Stirring speeches were made yesterday by the British and French delegates in requesting a vote on the spot, urging the necessity for action in the present hostilities. The vote of the Assembly was scheduled for 5.30 today, no reports have as yet come through as to the action taken by the whole body.

Equally emphatic, although not mentioning names, was the speech made by President Roosevelt at Chicago, pertinent portions of which are given here:

"It is my determination to pursue peace and adopt every practicable measure to avoid involvement in war. If civilisation is to survive, the principles of the Prince of Peace must be restored."

"The high aspirations of the Briand-Kellogg Pact have given way to the haunting fear of calamity. The reign of terror and lawlessness has reached a stage where the very foundations of civilisation are being threatened. Without a declaration of war and without warning and justification, civilians, including women and children, are ruthlessly murdered by bombs from the air."

"In times of so-called peace ships are attacked and sunk by submarines without cause or notice. Nations claiming peace for themselves deny it to others. Innocent peoples are being cruelly sacrificed to greed, power and supremacy, which is devoid of all sense, justice and humanity."

"If these things happen in other parts of the world let nobody imagine that America will escape or that she may expect mercy."

"If these things are to be prevented peace-loving nations must make a concerted effort to uphold the laws and principles on which alone peace can rest secure. There must be a return to belief in the pledged word and the value of a signed treaty."

The third measure of world disapproval of Japan's action and the most emphatic one was given in a resolution passed by a public meeting in London presided over by the Archbishop of Canterbury, Dr. Cosmo Lang, despite the previous protests of Japan-Episcopalians. The meeting was shown films of bombing scenes in China and several violent speeches were made before passing on the resolution which records "its horror and emphatic condemnation of indiscriminate attacks upon civilian non-combatants by Japanese forces, and urging the British Government to take the lead in securing concerted action by economic measures, or otherwise, to prevent a continuance."

Fighting in the regions around Shanghai was not so severe today as yesterday. The Chinese reported minor gains in the Kiangwan district and in the Paoshan Road district with the Japanese in the latter area reported to have retreated to the North Szechuen Road district.

Japanese planes and artillery laid down a terrific barrage on the western districts today and gave the eastern and northern fronts a comparative breathing spell. Heavy shelling of the railway lines and Chungshan Road west of the North Station was so severe that at one time 25 shells were counted falling into one small spot in the space of 50 seconds. 22 Japanese planes bombed west of Siccawei and the western villages of Peisinching and Yangching in mid-morning with damage confined to civilian properties.

Chapei while relatively quiet did not escape attention altogether as routine shelling and bombing operations were carried out by the Japanese. Five huge Japanese monoplanes participated in the bombing operations in the morning and dropped the largest bombs seen yet. Chinese batteries dropped shells into the North Szechuen Road and Darroch Road districts during the day.

Japanese troops are reported to have crossed Wentsao Creek south of Liuhong this morning under cover of artillery fire. The Chinese on the northeast fronts are counter-attacking constantly now in an effort to drive the Japanese back, but essentially the lines are the same as yesterday. Tazang and Nanziang lines were bombed by the Japanese during the day. The admission was made by the Japanese today that they had lost a plane over Tazang yesterday.

Another Japanese plane was brought down by Chinese anti-aircraft fire during a raid at Nanking today. Seven bombers had appeared over the outskirts of the capital but reports said that the ground fire was so severe that the raiders turned back. Soochow was bombed heavily by eight Japanese planes shortly after 8:00 a.m. today with the extent of damage and loss of life as yet unknown.

In north Shansi, Chinese troops have begun to swing the tide of battle in the other direction according to reports received here today which detail the recapture of three key towns on the front and the continued advance of the Chinese armies in a northwesterly direction. Fighting along the Tientsin-Pukow railway is now centered at points between Tehchow and Sunyuan according to these latest Chinese reports.

Reports of the intention of the Chinese to blow up the mole at Chefoo have brought forth the protests of the American Navy and the Consular Body in that city. The protests point out the futility of blowing up the mole since an attack through Shantung would almost certainly be made through Tsingtao rather than Chefoo.

Meanwhile many Shanghai foreigners who have been laboring under the delusion that the curfew was

meant only for those without the proper connections, woke up this morning in jail after having been picked up last night after hours.

The writer together with a staff member of the *Shanghai Evening Post & Mercury* returned to Shanghai today from their trip through Kiangsu, Chekiang, Kiangsi and Anhwei provinces. A complete diary of this trip as published in *"Through Four Provinces with Shanghai Evening Post and Mercury Correspondents" follows:—*

FIRST DAY

We left Shanghai at 8:20 a.m. well loaded down with provisions and gasoline for Hangchow which we expected to make in six or seven hours with side detours and stop-overs. It was not long, however, after leaving the French Concession limits that we picked up an escort, a Japanese seaplane out on reconnoitering work. Our visitor from the sky stayed with us for about an hour, giving us some very uncomfortable moments whenever it passed overhead at a very low altitude. Our nervousness, however, was brought on by a previous experience with three Japanese bombers over Chapei.

In one hour's travelling, we had gone the great distance of 21 miles and as the writer was used to skipping over the highways into Hangchow in three to three and one half hours from Shanghai, we began to wonder just when we would arrive in the city of temples. For the next hour we had fairly good roads to traverse and were able to pick up mileage, the speedometer of our faithful Chevrolet showing that we had done 42 miles in the two hours since leaving Shanghai.

However, misfortune overtook us shortly when we bogged down in the mud. As we were in open country and close to the seashore with only rice fields surrounding us, our eyes commenced a careful survey of the sky to find out whether any Japanese aircraft were up. If there had been, dear readers, you may be assured that we would have ducked into the rice paddy fields on either side of the roads for one good muddy bath.

After locating a villager and explaining our predicament as well as bargaining as to the price to be paid for being dragged out of the mud, which cost us $2, about twenty farmers pushed, lifted and pushed some more to finally get us out of our predicament after 25 minutes of wallowing around in the sea of mud in this section of the road.

On leaving, we were told that the road would improve after another two miles. It did in sections and our car, owing to its excellent work so far in traversing roads which even in normal times would have seemed impassable, received the nick-name of "Old Faithful."

In another half an hour, we were stopped by the military and warned that bombing activities were under way by Japanese planes right ahead. Very interesting indeed and soon the drone of motors was audible right in front of us at a distance of about 10 miles. Our informer immediately scurried for a grass shack as also did the civilians around this section of the road. Wasting no time, we sought out a large tree, about 25 yards up the road, parked our car under the protection of its branches, and we also ran for cover in a thicket some 10 yards off the highway. In our hurry to take cover we left our field glasses and camera in the car. Four seaplanes, flying in "V" formation, passed directly over our heads and then broke into single file. After circling the entire area for about 15 minutes, it was noted that three of them had disappeared into the North while it is not known what happened to the fourth.

Proceeding on at a fairly fast speed after partaking of a late tiffin of sardines and bread, we were once again stopped and told that an air raid was expected in Hangchow and that we had better remain where we were. After convincing our polite informer that we were quite familiar with air raids, being veterans of the Shanghai bombings of "Bloody Saturday," we were told that we could proceed, but advised to travel very slowly.

Driving up to the city wall, just before the railway crossing, we were struck by the stillness of the area. Continuing on through the city, no pedestrians were observed on any of the streets, the only visible humans being policemen at their regular posts. We reached our hotel without any incident and had a feeling of importance that we should be the only individuals travelling through the entire city at a time when Japanese planes were expected. At the hotel we were given information about the four planes that made us take cover. We were told that one plane had made a forced landing and that one of the occupants was captured while two others escaped into the country side, which was being scoured by the Chekiang special police. It was confirmed that both were captured alive two days later. The sirens announcing the "all clear" signal was sounded at 4.10 p.m.

At 4.20 p.m. the city's sirens were once again sounded. At the hotel we were told that we must stay in and, if so desired, use the hotel's dugout reserved for guests. We eventually left the hotel and while walking along the main thoroughfare were stopped by the police and told to take cover at a certain concentration point. We obeyed orders, but as we had arranged for a certain interview, we soon ventured out again and by walking close to the sides of buildings were allowed to proceed to our destination. After

our interview, we made a trip through the shopping district and on returning to our hotel, were treated to the sight of a city practically in darkness through gadgets placed over street lights and with shop fronts closed as early as 7 p.m.

SECOND DAY

One way of acquiring the habit of being an early riser, it seems, is to live in the interior. The air-raid alarm woke us up uncomfortably early this morning. "Nippon planes have got," the boy explained after knocking at the door. The alarm lasted for sometime during which most of the people in the hotel took cover in a nice dug-out built against the hill.

Inside the dug-out, we found chairs and tables. Two of the "refugees" were playing a game of chess. "We have to stay in for such long hours," they explained, "we might as well play chess when waiting for the 'all clear' signal". The same explains for the presence of a biscuit tin inside the dug-out. Ironically, the biscuit tin bore the picture of "Goddess of Peace" apparently an imitation of an imported brand with the Statue of Liberty as the trademark.

Evenything is quiet on the street, and the beautiful West Lake was as smooth as a mirror. In peaceful times, this would have been the most popular period of the year to spend a holiday in Hangchow. Now, the lake and all the scenic spots are deserted, a deadly blow to the Hangchow tourist trade.

The air raid alam lasted for more than one hour, during which time, not a single plane was sighted. Armed with our passes issued by the Commander-in-Chief of the Shanghai area, we walked to the City Government building, not being able to get a ricksha near the hotel.

Conversations with government officials occupied the whole morning, winding up with a tiffin in a Cantonese restaurant. In the afternoon, we called on the provincial government at a very untimely period of the day. Just as we walked into the building, an air-raid alarm, the second of the day, was sounded. The office was soon deserted, as it had been previously arranged that all should make for the dugout once the sirens were sounded.

Leaving the office, we came to a deserted city. Our faithful ricksha-pullers were still waiting and they conveyed us as far as the officers would allow. They considered our walking along the street a big compromise to their orders as moving along in rickshas would be too much. So our poor legs had to carry us for a long distance to the hotel, through the deserted streets. Here and there, we stopped to refill our supplies as on the morrow we expect to leave for Hweichow, Anhwei.

THIRD DAY

Air raid sirens let us down this morning as we were not awakened by them as expected. The hotel boys, however, woke us up early enough to make last minute preparations for the second lap of our trip.

"Old Faithful," meaning the car, required some grease and oil, so we took it to a large service station. We got caught midway by the belated "alarm clock," Japanese planes which were fast approaching the city. The service station, according to the regulations there, was not supposed to do any work during the state of alarm. Our indifference to the alarm, however, injected some confidence in the workers who finally agreed to carry out the job.

Just as our car was pulling out from the station, another urgent "alarm" was sounded. The streets were deserted, so we sped on toward the highway, being inspected but twice when leaving Hangchow borders. We saw a couple of incoming buses held up there, because of the siren.

From then on, we did not make a single stop until noon when we halted for a bite. There we interviewed some farmers from whom we got the impression that Nanking's drive against illiteracy, has considerably raised the intellectual level of the peasants. They were well informed of the war situation. They told us that only once had they seen Japanese planes passing overhead.

Resuming the trip, we arrived at Sanyangkang, the border mountain pass between Chekiang and Anhwei where we had to wait until an approaching car had passed us. Before starting the one-way-traffic climb, we took the opportunity of interviewing more native residents. They all turned the tables on us by wanting to know the latest about Shanghai and North China.

We reached Hweichow uneventfully at 3:30 p.m. One of us had the "pleasure" of staying over night at the best Hweichow hotel a year ago. His experiences were none too pleasant. Plenty of rats and no cats. Preferring to be in "No-Man's-Land" better than the "No-Cats-Land", we tried to locate a British missionary station, only to find ourselves in a Catholic Church. The Spanish Father was the only foreigner remaining in the ancient city.

After making arrangements for our gasoline supply, we decided to move on and arrived in Tunki amid a heavy downpour at 4:30 p.m. Close to the bus station we found a new hotel, so we decided to stop there. The management accorded us the honor of allowing us to park the car right in the center of the yard inside the hotel. The "Old faithful," a coupe, attracted no little attention, as that type of car is rarely seen on the highways there.

"Foreign devils driving a turtle," one boy remarked after a careful inspection.

We were escorted into a twenty-foot room and as we could not comfortably accommodate ourselves in such a small space, we allowed ourselves the liberty of using the veranda overlooking the yard.

That evening, we became the talk of the hotel. Our cooking on the veranda caused no little stir in the hotel as the aroma from our boiling soup and coffee reached the four corners of the Station Hotel.

We had an elaborate dinner at Tunki with "Kleenex" laid out on the none too clean table. Two kerosene lamps (one more than regularing provided by the hotel management) rested on biscuit tins while our brand new utensils laid glistening on the table. Our "menu" was as follows:—

Mulligatawny Soup
Pork & Beans
Bartlett Pears
Bread and Butter
Coffee

The meal over, we did some exploring, visiting the town proper. Somewhere in the still of the night, we heard the familiar sound of a printing press in action and with the aid of our flashlights, we traced it to a small house. There, two men were printing the leading newspaper of Southern Anhwei. The hand press was doing good work, printing red hot news for the readers in the interior. We were once again given a cordial reception when we were taken in to see the editor, Mr. Chang, a smart looking youth. From him and other assistants of the newspaper, we obtained a word-picture of the situation in that part of the province.

Strictly according to old Chinese etiquette, Mr. Chang returned our call. In our small room, we discussed the general situation in and around Shanghai, not realizing at the time that we, who used to interview others, were being interviewed.

FOURTH DAY

With 445 kilometers to do and with bad roads ahead, (information which we gathered from the bus station), we got up very early this morning after spending most of the night chasing "Stinson Planes," a name we gave the huge mosquitoes that hovered about. We were more than satisfied, however, as there were no "tanks" (bed bugs) in the room.

The highway from Hweichow to Nanchang, our destination, was teeming with activities. Traffic was extremely heavy on the road and we were held up at ferry crossings three times. Waiting at one of them, while we interviewed the native residents, we also took the opportunity of refilling both the "Old Faithful" and ourselves. Some of the boys there must have been appointed that we did not empty more gasoline tins and leave them behind.

It was about 5:45 p.m. when we approached Nanchang. "Stop!" shouted a soldier coming out from behind a tree. "An air raid is going on and you must wait here until all is over." Against a clear sky and a beautiful sunset we observed four planes flying at a very high altitude.

A steady drone of engines was then heard. First, we saw nine planes flying in formation, then three more. The four planes, now identified as Chinese pursuit planes, engaged the others and machineguns rattled. The Japanese raiders then let loose their bombs and the detonations and explosions were all too close to us to be comfortable. With their job seemingly done they left, ignoring the enemy planes. It was quite a while, however, before the "all clear" signal was sounded, the time being exactly 7.15 p.m. when gongs in the nearby village announced it. No one was allowed to travel in their cars with headlights on and we heard warning shots fired at a truck for violating this rule.

Nobody seemed to have any knowledge where the Japanese bombs landed that evening. It was not until the next day that information was obtained from official sources that about nine bombs were dropped on the Nanchang airdrome at Lientang, ten miles from the city and about one half mile from where we were held up.

FIFTH DAY

The day was spent on calls made on high Nanchang officials and sight-seeing of the areas bombed by the Japanese inside the Kiangsi Provincial City.

After obtaining some more gasoline, we called on Major General Liao Shih-chiao, a returned student from Japan, who is the Peace Preservation Corps Commander and Air Defence Commander of the Province. The Major General gave us a very comprehensive picture of the situation in Kiangsi. Wanting variety in our diet, we tried to locate a restaurant downtown but it was a futile search, Nanchang people, unlike other Chinese, not being epicures. Even in peace times, the town did not possess many restaurants. One of them closed down since the trouble while the others gave us the impression that they have not yet been "reformed" by the New Life Movement, of which Nanchang is the birthplace.

A photographic expedition was conducted in the afternoon. Various spots that were bombed were photographed. The Nanchang people were certainly calm, those surviving the air raids quietly rebuilding their wrecked homes.

Returning to the hotel, we received an invitation to meet Major General Liao at his private residence "somewhere in Nanchang."

SIXTH DAY

"Leave at daybreak" was our decision last night, so promptly at six, "Old Faithful" was heading for Tunki. Retracing the road, we found ourselves near the spot where the Japanese planes had raided the day before yesterday. All appeared intact, including the hangers. The holes, if any, caused by the bombs, had been filled up. Stopping for "chow," a farmer informed us that he visits the city every night—a walk of five li (about 1½ mile)—to listen to the radio broadcasts.

Retracing the 445 kilometers of bumpy road was not a pleasant drive by any means, so it was with a sigh of relief when we found ourselves approaching Tunki. When our car entered the hotel yard, we found the manager courteously awaiting us and found more and more people gathering around us. We were not required to fill the register, as they did the necessary for us. In short, we had become quite "famous" overnight.

We found out to our surprise, that we were the talk of the town, as on the day we left, the newspaper had printed a long account of our arrival and quoted us on various subjects, particularly on the Shanghai war situation, being travellers as we were, from the theater of hostilities.

"Old Faithful" still attracted no little attention, as a matter of fact, it shared the limelight with us. The manager particularly, inspected our car over and over again, admirnng every detail including the radio receiving set, which, unfortunately, was out of order.

Tomorrow, we shall start for Nanking via Wuhu, which lately had been bombed by the Japanese.

SEVENTH DAY

We really must appeal to the International Labor Office in Geneva for having to work more than eight hours a day. After another night of protracted battle with "Stinson Planes," we were again up at five, ready for another lap of our tour.

Along the road, we picked up a report that two Japanese planes had been brought down near Ningkuo, which is along our way. Upon reaching that city after covering stretches of bad road, we ran into a blank wall as nobody knew anything about the crashes. To our amazement, we found that we were not famous in Tunki alone, but also within a radius of some miles which were served by the newspaper. We did not have to introduce ourselves or produce our credentials. Everybody we approached simply said: "Ah, you are so and so."

It had started to rain again and the sudden change of temperature certainly made us feel most uncomfortable. The mercury was above 90 yesterday and it must have dropped to about 70 or even less today.

Early this afternoon we arrived at Wuhu. As usual we travelled in circles before or finally found our way to the Magistrate's office, who, we were informed, was having his tiffin. He certainly must have gulped it down for almost immediately he came to meet us most cordially and explained that the city proper had not been attacked by Japanese planes as yet. The emergency landing field near the city, however, had been bombed. After further conversation, we took our departure, found our way out of the maze of strange streets and dashed towards Nanking.

Suddenly, we heard the drone of a plane and on looking around, we saw it not more than 60 feet off the ground on the right side of the car, giving us a good once-over. Our heartbeats increased until we saw the emblem of the "Blue sky and White Sun." It was a Chinese plane. It slowly circled over our car, banked and had another good look at us before heading off for an unknown destination. Then we came across the remains of two Chinese instruction planes, apparently destroyed by Japanese bombs.

Approaching Nanking, we found the traffic heavy. Without much questioning or inspection, we entered the city and were amazed to find that everything seemed to be normal inside the Capital. Business seemingly was going on as usual while buses, painted in a dark color, were running. Outside of some buildings that had been blacked, and streets dotted with dug-outs, one hardly saw any difference from the pre-war Nanking.

We motored to our hotel in Hsiakwan, feeling somewhat disappointed that we did not actually witness a raid on the city.

EIGHTH DAY.

After two days of hard driving, and nights battling mosquitoes, the room in our Hsiakwan hotel seemed a "paradise". The first thing we did this morning was to give "Old Faithful" another "tonic" as she certainly deserved it after having made all that distance without a mishap.

We then called at the government offices, where we found a "business as usual" atmosphere everywhere as high officials and assistants went about their duties.

Tiffin over and still no excitement at all in the air, we decided to give the city another round of sight-seeing. No outward signs of damage could be observed to the streets as they were usually immediately repaired. The Hsiakwan Power Station, was still there but with the building partially destroyed.

Shortly before sunset, the sirens finally sounded warning us that Japanese planes were approaching. Within 10 minutes, the streets were cleared of pedestrians. Dugouts were filled with people seeking cover. Cars dashed on the

smooth and deserted roads to carry the passengers home. Fifteen minutes later, the sirens screached a second time, warning the people that the Japanese planes were within a short distance of the city.

Presently, three Japanese seaplanes appeared from a westerly direction and against the sun—taking advantage of the glare—and made straight for the Chinese defenses. As they appeared near the city wall, the Chinese anti-aircraft guns went into action. We had expected to see the Chinese version of the Japanese "archie fire," but were disappointed. The former were seemingly much more accurate as the shells exploded very close to the Japanese planes, at least that's how it looked to us, watching the show as we did from our hotel veranda.

One of the raiding planes was observed to dive down as if hit but it pulled out almost immediately however, and was up again. The planes remained for several minutes, dropping a few small bombs. The "all clear signal" was given one hour and 40 minutes after the first alarm.

At dinner, we all spoke of a possible night raid. Our predictions came true, as at 12:30 a.m. we again heard the sirens. Much too tired, however, we slept through the period of this alarm, which ended at 2.15 a.m. No planes came near as it was reported.

NINTH DAY

Despite all the interruptions, we were up quite early to start on our last lap of the four-province tour. Before starting, however, we had no desire to be caught in an air raid and so timed our trip to pass by a certain airdrome as early as possible in order to avoid being involved in one.

Speeding along the road as the traffic was still light, we passed the air field before 7 a.m., and made our way to Changshing, following the Nanking-Hangchow Highway. Eventually we reached Kashing and retraced the newly cut road to Shanghai without meeting a single plane all the way. It was not yet 1.30 p.m., when we entered the French Concession.

To our mingled despair and joy, we learned upon reaching Shanghai that Japanese planes had just bombed Wusih and Soochow, as well as Nanking that morning. It was also reported that a Japanese raider was brought down in Nanking. We missed all these events and were much disappointed at not being able to cover these incidents and to gather further material for our articles.

October 7

Telegraphic reports received here today indicate that the United States is taking an increased interest in the Far Eastern problem every day. An official statement issued by the State Department, after alluding to the efforts of the United States to obtain a peaceful solution of the problem here, goes on to make the definite assertion that Japan's actions in China are "contrary to the provisions of the Nine-Power Pact and the Kellogg Peace Pact." At the same time well-informed circles in London asserted today that the United States would be receptive to any suggestion for the convocation of a Pacific Conference on the present hostilities, although pointing out at the same time that Japan would be most likely to refuse any invitation to participate in such a conference. No such invitation has been received in Washington as yet.

Rain on the local front kept most of the aircraft grounded although one plane was observed at 8:00 a.m. to drop bombs at Tazang and then circle around to the Markham Road yards to drop the rest of its load. Artillery fire directed at Chapei was almost heavy enough to take the place of the aerial bombs throughout the day. The Japanese shelling was directed at the area to the west of the Wusih Guild this morning while Chinese batteries were throwing shells into the Japanese School area on North Szechuen Road. Early in the morning for an hour, seven Japanese gunboats bombarded Pootung and Kiangwan.

Chinese troops are reported to be digging in on the line from the North Station to the International Race Course to prevent advances by the Japanese. This line was the target for many Japanese batteries during the day. Heavy fighting took place on this line last night with the Japanese attacking and being driven back by the Chinese entrenched there. Japanese and Chinese alike report gains in the Lotien-Liuhong sector for the day with the rains precluding any major activity. Artillery was active in this region last night and through this morning.

While Chinese reiterate that the walled city to Tehchow is held by their forces the Japanese claim to have taken it, stating that the possible reason for the Chinese assertions lies in the fact that at the time of the capture of the town a small detachment of Chinese hid inside the walls and were not *wiped* out until today. Meanwhile the Japanese are known to have received reinforcements near the Shantung town and fighting is going on in the vicinity. In north Shansi, the Chinese Eighth Route Army embodying the former Communist forces continues to report successes. The force is reported to be menacing the Japanese rear and pushing on in an attempt to outflank the enemy. 2000 Japanese are reported to be surrounded by Chinese at Yuanping, 10 kilometers north of the Yenmen Pass, and are fighting to break their way through the cordon while Japanese and Chinese planes fight for the mastery of the air above them.

October 8

While Tientsin is threatened by a flood caused by the rise in the rivers near the city which have already caused a serious breach in the Grand Canal system of protective dykes, Chinese forces on all fronts in the north have started a major attack to take advantage of the lull in Japanese operations. The Japanese have explained the lull in their operations by saying

that they must re-group and rest their troops as well as secure lines of communications. Meanwhile the Chinese apparently intend to give them no rest. Japanese occupation of Tehchow, denied yesterday by the Chinese, was tacitly admitted by them today when they announced that a counter-attack under the personal direction of General Han Fu-chu was being directed at the town. A heavy concentration of Japanese naval vessels has been noticed off Haichow and planes have taken off daily from aircraft carriers in the fleet to raid Shantung points. With artillery giving way to hand-to-hand fighting, high casualty figures are given for the day's fighting in north Shansi. No major gains were reported on this front.

Heavy fighting went on in the North Station area last night and only died down when the last Japanese attack was repulsed at 4:00 a.m. Chinese lines in this area were observed this morning to be unchanged excepting for the addition of several sandbag emplacements, some of which were pointed at the Settlement. Routine shelling and bombing operations were carried out on all fronts here with no marked severity during the day. The day closed with a "bang" when naval guns pounded Pootung for an hour at midnight.

On the Lotien-Liuhong front the mud hampered operations of the Japanese and no severe engagements involving large bodies of troops took place. The Japanese are reported to be still holding the banks of Wentsao Creek in the face of fierce Chinese counter-attacks carried out ever since the Creek was taken two days ago.

A Japanese air raid on Wusih, reports of which have just come through, killed 200 civilians Wednesday afternoon, wrecked several buildings and residences near the railway station and wrecked a coach of the Nanking-Shanghai express which was just pulling in to the station. 50 were killed on the train which was derailed. 20 bombs were dropped in all in the raid and many fires were started, all of which were brought under control.

Soochow was again raided yesterday morning at 8:00 a.m. when a squadron of Japanese planes bombed and machinegunned the railway station, killing 26 and wounding 60.

Canton however was the worst hit from the air yesterday as Japanese planes visited three times to bomb the city thoroughly. One bomb alone at this city killed 60 when it tore through the roof of a large godown and wrecked the building together with 17 houses in the area. One Japanese plane was reported downed at Dahliuchiache.

The following proclamation was issued by the Japanese army commander, General Matsui, this evening:

Charged by His Majesty the Emperor with the task of heading the Shanghai expeditionary forces, I have landed on Chinese soil south of the Yangtze. The Japanese army is now prepared to use every means within its power to subdue its opponents.

The objectives of the Japanese Expeditionary Forces are, as clearly set forth in statements issued by the Japanese government, not only to protect the vested interests of Japan and the lives and property of the Japanese residents in the affected area but also to scourge the Chinese government and army who have been pursuing anti-foreign and anti-Japanese policies in collaboration with Communist influences. In short, the mission of the Japanese army is to establish the foundations for a firm and lasting peace in East Asia.

We cannot but feel sorry for the many innocent persons who are unfortunately living in the area of hostilities, and it goes without saying that the Japanese army has no enmity toward the Chinese people in general. However, against those who bear arms against Japan, the Japanese army will show no mercy.

Toward the officials and nationals of foreign Powers who have suffered from the hostilities or who have been threatened with injuries to their persons or property, we express our deepest sympathies.

The Japanese army will leave nothing undone to respect and protect the lives and property of nationals of the third Powers.

With the close cooperation of the naval forces, the Japanese Expeditionary Force is determined to clear the skies of ominous clouds and I am confident that the day is not so far off when the light of peace will shine again.

October 9

Fighting was slowed down on all of the local fronts today by a continual downpour. Japanese attacked Chinese positions in the North Station-Eight Character Bridge section several times during the night, but the attacks are believed to be mere sorties by scouting parties as the firing was brief on each occasion. No planes went up during the day but desultory shelling started in mid-morning with a few heavy shells falling in the Commercial Press area before tiffin time. A shell or two at intervals throughout the afternoon fell in various sectors of Chapei. The naval guns which had pounded Pootung last night were silent today.

In the Liuho-Liuhong sector both sides were held up by the steady downpour. One brisk fight was reported near Wentsao Creek where Japanese troops reinforced by units from the Kiangwan front attacked Chinese positions to gain a few yards before being stopped by the mud and by the Chinese defenders. A Japanese military spokesman announced today that the Chinese dead left on local battlefields since the start of hostilities totalled 57,767.

With a view to destroying the Japanese mechanized equipment, Chinese planes have been raiding Japanese positions along the Peiping-Hankow line during the past few days. Damage done so far

to the Japanese is reported as severe and the raids are to continue. Meanwhile the Chinese in falling back along all fronts to prepared defense positions are offering stiff resistance to the advancing Japanese and casualties on both sides are declared to be heavy. In Shantung, General Han Fu-chu has dispatched the major portion of the forces at his disposal to the front. In north Shansi the Eighth Route Army of Communists is continuing its guerilla tactics on the Japanese lines of communication. Japanese naval vessels were sighted off Tsingtao last night in the vicinity of Tatung Island.

The British Prime Minister, Neville Chamberlain, in an address at a great party gathering in Scarborough stated that the speech of President Roosevelt at Chicago reflected the opinion not only of the United States, but of the British public as well.

Also yesterday a statement was made by the Association of Members of the Japanese House of Representatives upholding Japan's action in China. Citing the cases by which Japan has attempted to prove in the past that China is the aggressor, the statement went on to say that the expeditionary force was sent to China as a self-defense measure and therefore did not violate the Nine-Power Pact nor the Kellogg Pact.

October 10

The entire left wing of the Japanese army in the north is imperiled as a result of the floods which have cut off their lines of communication and made impossible the dispatch of supplies and reinforcements to the troops in the line. The floods are believed due to the rises of water in the river system and the break in the walls of the Grand Canal as well as the lack of supervision of the waterways since the start of hostilities. Japanese troops along the Peiping-Hankow railway launched an attack along a 90 mile front yesterday against the Chinese positions on the south bank of the Huto River. Advances are also claimed for the Japanese in North Shansi.

In Shanghai, the anniversary of the "Double Ten" finds Chinese still in occupation of their lines which have not changed materially for a week despite the assertion of the Japanese command that the Chinese would drop back to their second defense line by this date. Fierce small clashes were reported during the night along the Chapei front with the Chinese on Paoshing Road trapping a Japanese detachment engaged in digging a tunnel to mine Chinese positions. No changes in the lines in this sector were reported and the area was quiet today with the exception of an occasional machinegun burst. The heavy downpour also bogged down the troops and equipment on the Liuho-Liuhong front and the whole area there was quiet throughout the night and all day today with clashes between outposts flaring up at intervals. Yesterday morning the Japanese are reported to have attempted to land Marines at the fortified post of Fushan from gunboats on the Yangtze. The troops were repulsed by entrenched Chinese on the shore and the gunboats opened fire on the Chinese positions after the unsuccessful attempt, throwing several shells into the area without any effect on the defenders.

250 British naval officers and men who left the Capetown three days ago en route to Hongkong by rail arrived there at midnight last night after having had the experience of having the railway bombed several times in close proximity to their train. The Capetown is tied up above the boom in the Pearl River, unable to proceed outward because of the blocking of the channel.

Thirty planes participated in two raids on the Canton-Hankow railway yesterday and dropped many bombs. Two of the raiders were shot down by Chinese pursuit ships and several were declared injured by anti-aircraft fire.

Biggest news of the day was brought into Shanghai by a foreigner just returned from Manchukuo. He relates that several uprisings broke out in the north on September 11, news of which was kept from the outside world by a rigid wall of censorship. Japanese troops put down the uprisings and charged that they were incited by a Russian organization.

October 11

The hostilities on the local front ended their holiday early this afternoon as the weather began to clear and fighting broke out, which, while not of the most severe variety was still brisk enough to mark a change from the tactics of the past four days. No radical changes on any front in Shanghai were reported at the close of day. On the Liuho-Liuhong area the mud still hampered troops in their movements and prevented the mechanized units from coming into any advance movement. Troops in this area are reported to be standing knee deep in water and mud in the trenches. In Chapei parties of Chinese changed from defensive to offensive tactics and pushed through to North Szechuen Road at points, but dropped back later to their original positions. The Japanese spokesman said today that with the change in weather advances by the Japanese of a major nature would be made in the next few days, while the Chinese state that the fourth "big push" of the Japanese has already been made and failed. 2800 was the figure given for Japanese deaths on all Shanghai fronts since the start of hostilities in this area.

Desultory shelling of Chapei and Kiangwan went on through the day with Chinese batteries sending over a few shells in reply. Last night the Chinese batteries in Pootung shelled Hongkew and Wayside and two of the shells hit the Ewo Cotton Mill with no loss of life reported.

Three Japanese bombers took the air shortly after noon with the clearing skies and dropped 20 bombs in as many minutes on Yangshin Road, the Commercial Press area and Chungshan Road. Late

in the afternoon 20 Japanese planes bombed Pootung well away from the waterfront while gunboats in the river engaged in a duel with machinegun units on the shore in the vicinity of the Olivier Engineering Works. The Japanese observation balloon which was first noticed several days ago was up again about one mile to the east of the Liuhong radio station. Heavy shelling and some bombing of the Tazang district was noticed shortly after noon.

Under a novel arrangement apparently entered into with the Chinese Government's sanction and involving transhipment to junks, cargo was moved yesterday across the Yangtze boom at Nantungchow. The reopening of freight movements across the boom was described to the writer by an official of Jardine, Matheson & Co. today as being of the first importance since no other routes are available by which to move the bumper crop of grain of the Yantze Valley.

The major offensive launched by the Japanese along the 90 mile front in Hopei bore fruit today with the announcement that the important town of Shihchiachwang had fallen to the advancing troops of the right wing of the Japanese army yesterday afternoon. The town is of strategic value since its capture leaves Taiyuan open to attack from the east. 200,000 Chinese are stated to be retreating with the Japanese pursuing to the objective of Shunteh, an important station on the Peiping-Hankow railway. The Chinese are reported to hold strong positions in north Shansi after retiring from the walled city of Kuohsin following bloody battles. Strong positions are also held by the Chinese along the Tientsin-Pukow line and Japanese attacks designed to cross the old Huangho were driven back by the Chinese.

A charge was made today by the Chinese that Japanese have used gas shells in their bombardments on the Lotien front and the warning was given that if the use of gas persists the Chinese will have to take retaliatory measures.

October 12

Japanese planes roared over Chapei all day today to drop bombs continuously on positions which were at the same time being shelled. It was the biggest day's activity on this front for a week and by evening a thick cloud of smoke and dust hung all over the area north of the Creek. Chinese big guns in Chapei shelled Hongkew throughout the day repeating their tactics of constant changes of location and silence at the times the planes were overhead. The Japanese planes were greeted by heavy anti-aircraft fire which was as usual ineffective. Some bombing of Pootung was done in the afternoon in the vicinity of Hwa Tai Dong Wharf where a large fire was started. A gunboat in the river shelled godowns near the Shanghai-Hongkew Wharf in an attempt to drive out machinegun snipers.

Tazang and the whole Liuho sector came in for heavy shelling during the day but no changes in the lines were reported. Desultory fighting on the ground in Chapei was reported along the North Station area during the early morning with the Chinese holding their positions.

Comment on the fighting on northern fronts was made today by a competent foreign observer returned to Shanghai after watching closely the fighting in the north. He states as his belief based on his own observations that if the Nanking Government does not dispatch reinforcements to the northern armies which need the support of artillery, planes and mechanized units badly, the Japanese will be in Tsinan, capital of Shantung, within a week. He states that only three mobile brigades of artillery are on the whole Chinese front which extends some 500 miles and predicts the constant defeat of the Chinese by the Japanese mechanized forces until the Nanking Government reverses its policy of defending the capital at all costs. Further he states that General Han Fu-chu's loyalty can be counted upon for the simple reason that there are too many Central Government troops in his province for him to act otherwise. The value of his troops must not be overestimated however, since their equipment consists mostly of rifles and machineguns.

Meanwhile, without a halt, the Japanese continue to advance rapidly on all fronts in the north. The Suiyuan provincial capital, Kweisu, is expected to fall at any moment under an attack from three sides. Japanese troops are pressing into southern Hopei without much resistance south of the Yellow River. Chinese are reported to have blown up two bridges over the old Yellow River to block the further southward advance of the Japanese.

Nine Japanese planes raided Nanking this afternoon at 2:40 and dropped bombs on the south section of the city and the airdrome. One of the raiders was shot down by a Chinese pursuit plane. At 4:10 a later raid was made which lasted for 50 minutes.

October 13

A convoy of three British-marked and occupied cars was fired upon yesterday afternoon near Machiao on the Shanghai-Nanking highway by a flight of three Japanese planes. None of the occupants of the cars was injured, according to Flight-Lieut. Murray, British officer with the party. The cars were plainly marked with British flags painted on the tops and flying from the radiators and in addition the Japanese had been notified of the proposed trip. An investigation is being made and the British authorities are expected to file a protest on the incident.

The fighting in the Liuho-Liuhong sector is still the most severe taking place on the Shanghai front, although operations there last night had produced no advances for either side. After an all-night barrage laid down by a force of Japanese warships stated to number about twenty, landing operations were attempted from the ships at a point near Liuho. Chinese defense proved to be too strong and the attempt failed, the warships moving down stream.

Shelling and bombing of the east and north Chapei lines continued on a routine basis last night and today with the major portion of the explosives being directed at the Commercial Press and Paoshan Road areas. Planes bombing the Markham Road areas dropped extremely heavy bombs and drew sharp fire from the ground. The heaviest explosions of the day were observed along the Nanziang-Tazang line from early morning to mid-afternoon. On this line shrapnel was observed bursting in the air and bombing planes worked on the area in relays.

The warships in the river were observed at 10:00 a.m. to be firing into Kiangwan Village at three minute intervals for an hour. In the afternoon one destroyer fired several shells into a building at the rear of the Shanghai-Hongkew Pootung Wharf.

The Japanese forces in the north continued their relentless drive on Chinese positions. Gains of 10 miles are reported for the column which took Shihchiachwang in southern Hopei yesterday with no let-up in the advance. Chinese are reported to have used their air force twice yesterday in raids against Japanese positions. Five Northrop bombers raided Taku in the afternoon while during the day nine planes bombed and machinegunned Japanese positions on the banks of the old Yellow River bed.

Japanese planes yesterday gave Nanking a three-alarm scare but turned aside to drop their loads at Shiherhwan near Yangchow. The Canton-Hankow railway was again bombed yesterday and the Pakonchow Bridge blown up in addition to other damage wrought by the bombs on the railway. Some bombs were dropped on Chinese warships near the Bocca Tigris Forts and one ship was disabled.

October 14

Just two months to a day after "Bloody Saturday" a bomb landed within the International Settlement today and killed 10, wounding 13. The bomb was dropped from a Japanese plane engaged in bombing the Markham Road railway yard area and landed between Markham Road and Soochow Creek, completely wrecking a trackless tram packed with passengers.

The disaster occurred at 2:35 p.m. but undeterred by its results Japanese planes returned to the same area later in the afternoon and again dropped bombs right on the Creek bank, this time however on the Chinese side.

Twenty minutes after the Markham Road disaster a squadron of Japanese planes bombed the Hungjao district killing three and demolishing a number of houses including one owned by a German, Wilhelm Meller, which was flying a large German flag conspicuously.

Later in the afternoon a five-inch shell landed on Yu Ya-ching Road at Burkhill Road and killed eight while wounding 12. On North Honan Road six more were killed by a falling shell. At exactly 6:00 p.m. three shells from Chinese batteries fell in the Szechuen Road area almost in the heart of the Settlement and seriously wounded six Chinese. Nine other Chinese were picked up at Honan Road and Peking Road as another shell exploded on the street. A number of other shells fell in the Settlement without causing any casualties. All of the missiles were believed to have come from Chinese batteries which were attempting to get the range on Japanese positions in Hongkew from new battery locations.

Several visits were made by Chinese planes between midnight and morning and the anti-aircraft falling splinters accounted for several more casualties. The total hospital list was over 100 with another 40 dead, the highest mortality in 24 hours the Settlement has experienced since the Sincere disaster.

Japanese planes visited many small villages on the outskirts of Nanking and dropped many bombs. Chinkiang, Kiangsu provincial capital, and two small resort cities in the province were also bombed during the day as were two small stations on the Shanghai-Hangchow railway. 35 planes in one raid and 30 in another shortly after bombed the Bocca Tigris Forts and the Canton-Hankow railway this morning. Chinese planes went up to intercept the raiders.

The bombing of Chapei which has become a daily routine for the Japanese airmen proceeded throughout the day with the Markham Road yards coming in for the largest share. This evening the buildings of the yards were burning fiercely. Jukong Road and the Commercial Press area were also recipients of bombs. Shells dropped all over Chapei during the day with the Commercial Press and North Station area coming in for the largest share. A brisk fight was going on all morning as Japanese attacked in the neighborhood of Jukong Road but no changes were observed in the lines.

Shells were exchanged between Pootung batteries and the warships in the river this morning and at the height of the activities a radioman, J. P. McMichael, was struck by a flying shell splinter and slightly injured while going about his duties aboard the U.S.S. Augusta. In the afternoon a destroyer was observed firing pointblank into Pootung godowns after having machinegunned them for a time.

Along the Liuhong-Tazang line Japanese attacks designed to capture Tazang were turned back by the Chinese and the situation in this area is unchanged from that of yesterday.

Kweisu, provincial capital of Suiyuan, whose capture was predicted for this week, was entered by Japanese soldiers early this morning. Other detachments pressed on beyond the city and captured Kweihua to the southwest. The Japanese drives in Hopei and Shansi appear to be pressing back the Chinese with undiminished speed.

October 15

Japanese warships, including an airplane carrier, were sighted outside Chapoo yesterday and

observations by the Chinese lead them to believe that landing operations by the Japanese will be attempted shortly.

Fierce fighting went on throughout last night as Chinese attacked Japanese positions in west Hongkew, but the rifle and machinegun fire died away to an occasional shot or two by dawn. No gains were made by the Chinese.

Japanese planes went up this morning in a business-like attempt to put out of commission the Chinese batteries which caused the death toll in the Settlement yesterday and presumably also damaged Japanese positions with their better directed shots. Many bombs were dropped throughout Chapei with the focal point of attention being an area northwest of the North Station. Shelling in comparison was light. After the hectic day yesterday and the battle along North Szechuen Road last night the day seemed very quiet.

The Japanese made several accusations today, among them the charge that the Park Hotel, utilized by the American Marines as an observation post, was also so used by Chinese military. The charge was denied by the Chinese.

Japanese planes bombed Taiyuan three times yesterday with damage to the town as yet unknown. Chinese in north Shansi report important successes while in Suiyuan the Japanese continue to drive their wedge southward following the capture of Kweichow yesterday.

October 16

Japanese planes bombed Chapei heavily this morning and early this afternoon. During the course of the bombing flights, over 100 bombs were dropped to start many fires. At one time the writer observed six planes simultaneously drop bombs on a single objective in the neighborhood of the railway tracks west of the North Station about 1000 yards north of the Creek. The resultant explosion shook the entire Settlement. Shelling was very light during the day immediately near Shanghai and the only other bombing was observed near Tazang which is becoming an increasingly popular objective of both Japanese aircraft and heavy batteries. Occasional light rifle and machinegun fire were heard in the east Chapei lines but fighting on the whole was quiet during the day and night. Several attacks were reported to have been made by Japanese troops on Chinese positions along the Liuho-Liuhong-Tazang lines but no major gains were announced for the day. Another attempt was reported made by the Japanese to land troops north of Liuho on the Yangtze yesterday during the course of which a warship ran aground and was made the target of devastating shell fire from the Chinese. The attempt was declared to be unsuccessful. The troops in this sector are still reported to be fighting for the possession of the banks of Wentsao Creek.

In the face of stubborn resistance by Chinese troops with light arms the Japanese are amplifying their campaign in Suiyuan and pushing westward. Tokio advices admit the Chinese strong defense, especially in Shansi, alleging that the Chinese have received reinforcements while the Japanese lines of communications are getting long and hard to protect. The Chinese squadron of planes which raided Japanese positions in Shansi yesterday lost two of their members by anti-aircraft fire according to the Japanese. A general Chinese withdrawal to south of the Yellow River, abandoning Hopei, Shansi, the northern part of Shantung and the greater part of Suiyuan is now regarded as inevitable.

While fighting is still going on in North China, industrialists in Osaka made public plans of an elaborate nature for the development of the economic resources of the region.

October 17

Routine bombing and shelling of Chapei took place again today but gave way in interest and importance to the almost continual sound and sight of the high explosives being rained on Tazang and the immediate area around the town. Observers believe that when and if the crucial town falls to the Japanese the Chinese will have to evacuate Chapei to avoid encirclement and annihilation. Each day finds an increasing amount of activity in this sector, but the Chinese are still holding out. High explosives were being rained on the Liuhong motor highway at noon today and advices from that front indicate that the opposing troops are still fighting over the banks of the Wentsaopang.

Attributing their defeats to lack of artillery support, Chinese today admitted the continuous advance of the Japanese in North China. Hsinhsien, previously reported captured by the Japanese, is still in Chinese hands and the general situation in North Shansi is considered better for the Chinese than that on any other North China front. Taiyuanfu is still menaced by Japanese forces approaching from the east while in the Tientsin-Pukow railway zone the Japanese are pushing on following their capture of Pingyuan and the two forces now oppose each other one mile south of the town.

The United States yesterday formally accepted the invitation of the Belgian Government to attend the Nine Power Conference in Brussels on October 30. The prompt acceptance of the United States without waiting to ascertain which other nations will attend is construed as indicating that she is willing to cooperate with anyone in an effort to find a peaceful solution of the Sino-Japanese problem.

October 18

Chinese planes raided Hongkew and the warships in the river eight times last night in making their second mass attack on Japanese positions in this area since hostilities started. The Seventh Day Adventist residence block of ten houses in Yangtzepoo was hit in the first raid and a Japanese soap

factory in the second, both before midnight. Results of the other raids were not made known.

The heaviest shelling and bombing of the day was concentrated on the Wentsaopang-Tazang-Liuhong sector again. The Japanese are reported to be making strenuous attempts to break through the Chinese lines at this front and severe fighting is still going on, but no advances have been made by the Japanese toward Tazang. Bombing and shelling of Chapei in the day is best described as routine in nature and occasional bursts of rifle and machinegun fire on the east Chapei lines were the only evidences of activity in that sector.

The small town of Chenju was practically wiped out yesterday when Japanese planes dropped more than 30 bombs there. Fourteen Japanese planes participated in the bombardments, and the casualty list was given as 100, including 40 deaths. Kating was also bombed heavily at 3:50 p.m. yesterday resulting in heavy casualties and damages. Soochow and Kashing were raided with light damage resulting while the Soochow-Kashing railway was badly damaged in places by bombs. The Canton-Hankow railway was bombed yesterday in northern Kwangtung, causing extensive damage to residences nearby. No casualties to foreigners were reported. The lower reaches of the railway have now enjoyed a rest from raiders for two days due, it is thought, to the fact that an aircraft carrier had gone aground at Hopao, west of Macao.

In the face of Japanese claims of a continued drive on all northern fronts the Chinese assert that their forces are holding back the Japanese at all points and are scoring successes in north Shansi. In this province the Chinese claim to have the Japanese in full retreat after the capture of Kwanglin city on the border. Large number of prisoners have been taken and stores of supplies in addition to motorized units seized.

1,000 returning evacuees, mostly wives and families, were greeted by their husbands and friends as they arrived by tugs conveying them from the two liners, the Felix Roussel and the Victoria. It was made clear by the consulates that those who returned did so at their own risk.

10,000 laborities in a mass meeting in London yesterday denounced Japan's "barbarism and aggression" in China.

October 19

Angered at the statements that they could not damage the Railway Administration Building by aerial bombardment because of poor marksmanship the Japanese air force this afternoon dropped bombs on the beautiful building in such rapid and devastating effect that the structure now stands partly in ruins. The airmen then bombed the immediate vicinity of the building, including the North Station, confused by many Shanghailanders as the Railway Administration Building, before retiring at noon. They returned at 2:15 p.m. and after one circling flight for observation began to drop bombs systematically on the building. The first three bombs were direct hits on the west wing of the building and the three dropped on the next wheeling circle of the planes hit the east wing and started a fire almost immediately. With six hits out of six bombs dropped the Japanese went away and the Chinese came out of their dugouts to fight the flames which by then were shooting out of third-story windows and through the roof but which were prevented by fire-proof walls from penetrating to the central and west portions of the buildings. With shell fire several times hitting the building during the afternoon in addition to the bombs the structure is now a blackened ruin with walls and roof holed, but the two radio towers still stand apparently undamaged.

Japanese bombers also dropped many of their missiles on the Tazang-Nanziang line and several small fires were observed to start there about noon. Chenju and the extreme eastern and western portions of Chapei were bombed in a routine manner with the Commercial Press area and the Markham Road Yards coming in for the lion's share of the explosives. In addition the whole area was shelled in a desultory manner. Chinese batteries were fairly active from Chapei, throwing their shells into the North Szechuen and Darroch Road areas. Chinese anti-aircraft fire was unusually severe especially around the North Station but there were no hits observed. In the early morning Japanese planes bombed north of Peitsai Village, Pootung.

Fighting is reported to have been especially heavy along the Nanziang front last night and today the Japanese made temporary gains after ruinous aerial bombing and artillery fire had paved the way for the troops. One whole Chinese regiment was wiped out according to Chinese reports which added that reinforcements aided the Chinese on the spot to counterattack and throw back the Japanese. The strategically important town of Chenchiachong is apparently still in Chinese hands and blocking the Japanese advance to Tazang. Fighting broke out along the Range Road-North Szechuen Road sector last night but died down a little later and no changes in the lines were noticeable there today.

Japanese have made the assertion that the Chinese are using shells filled with phosgene gas on the Wentsaopang line and that several such shells were in their possession. Warning was given that the Japanese army will have to retaliate if the practice is not stopped.

Citing names and numerical strength of units, the Chinese stated today that documents found on the bodies of Japanese officers on North China battlefields showed the Japanese to have six and a half divisions totalling over 200,000 men on North China fronts. Isolated units of this force cut off from the main forces and without supplies are now surrounded in north Shansi and in a desperate case, the Chinese report. Today the Japanese flag crossed into Honan on an armored train which made a dash ahead of the main Japanese forces in Hopei. Conflicting reports from the north leave the situation there somewhat in doubt as to the results of the past few days' fighting.

October 20

A staff member of the *Shanghai Evening Post and Mercury* made a tour of Chapei this morning with other newspaper representatives at the invitation of Mayor O.K. Yui. Soldiers were seen everywhere and field telephone wires were strung along nearly every street for communications between units, but the building themselves are almost all damaged, whole blocks in some sections being burnt out. Civilian families were still in their houses along the Creek, in places, but none were observed farther in Chapei. The whole district appears to be well defended with many concrete pill boxes and sandbag emplacements and amply manned by soldiers who appeared to be cheerful. Some 60 troops of a trench mortar unit have been stationed in the Administration Building since the start of hostilities and the party was told that there have been few casualties in this detail despite the constant shelling of the area. The building itself is full of holes on the north and east side and the east wing is burnt out down to the second floor.

While walking about Chapei's streets we were forced to duck for cover twice when Nipponese airmen dropped bombs on the street some 200 yards away. One soldier was observed to receive a neck wound but no other casualties were seen. Soldiers were well spread out because of the danger of massing under the shell fire and bombs and casualties were less severe than the estimates made by foreign observers.

Short advances are claimed by the Japanese for the day's fighting. The Chinese along the Nanziang-Wentsaopang line are reported to have erected pill boxes on creek banks and the motorized Japanese force is further hampered by the numerous small creeks and sodden paddy fields. Tazang and Nanziang are still in Chinese hands although the Japanese are centering their attack on this region. Heavy shelling and aerial bombing of the area was done by the Japanese all through the night and day.

The day's quota of shells and bombs was dropped on Chapei today with three small fires observed to have been started near the Wusih Guild. Chinese shells were seen dropping on North Szechuen Road near the Japanese School.

Chinese were successful in air warfare yesterday, bringing down a Japanese plane near Nanziang and coming over twice around midnight to drop bombs into Japanese supplies near Yulin Road and in the Yangtzepoo district. Other planes of the Chinese force dropped many bombs on Japanese lines in the Wentsaopang district last night with results not announced. Short clashes heralded by rifle and machinegun fire were heard in the Paoshan Road area during the night.

While reports from Japan comment on the speed of the Japanese advance in North China, reports from the front have the Chinese advancing to a point 20 li north of Pingyuan in northern Shantung. Fierce fighting is reported to be taking place on the Pinghan front with the Chinese force reinforced and holding out well in newly strengthened positions.

Interviewed by the *Shanghai Evening Post and Mercury*, Mr. Nobubumi Ito, recently Japanese Minister to Warsaw, stated today in regard to a settlement of the Sino-Japanese hostilities that "The Japanese people are unanimous in the belief that nothing serious can be done until the Army and Navy have succeeded in crushing the Chinese forces in the Shanghai area."

In a broadcast from Shanghai today over a United States nation-wide hookup Madame Sun Yat-sen condemned Japanese aggression. Her speech in full follows:

"I am particularly glad of the opportunity which permits me to speak to America upon a subject which now burns in every Chinese heart."

"I spent my youth in America and her great democratic tradition seeped into my being and became one of the great influences of my life. Her culture became part of my culture, something precious to carry back to my country so direly in need of democratic influences. So in appealing to the country of my youth I do not feel that I approach you as a stranger, but rather as one who knows that this appeal will be met with the understanding and response which America has hitherto so generously indicated in her attitude toward my country."

"China is at war,—a war of resistance against an unspeakably inhuman aggressor. The Japanese military in their fascist dreams of conquest, has again brought death and destruction to our shores. Who can read of the daily horrors visited upon the Chinese people without a shock of revulsion? Who can witness the wanton and deliberate bombing of innocent women and children, without vowing that the perpetrators of such barbaric deeds must be swept from the face of the earth? Who, knowing that the massacre of non-combatants in every one of our cities is considered a necessary military objective, can remain passive to this threat not only to China but to the civilization of the world? When the allegedly liberal Japanese premier, Prince Konoye, announced that "Japan's one course is to beat China to her knees so that she may no longer have the spirit to fight," his brutal words gave free rein to the blood-thirsty gang of militarists."

"Other Japanese diplomats,—more cunning and less frank,—mendaciously explain that all they demand is that China should fully understand their offers of co-operation, and in exchange for this generosity only rewrite our histories according to their notions. Anti-Japanism is to be expunged from our lives and our school-books, and we are to construe their barbarisms as holy deeds of a divine mission. I can only leave this hallucination for the world to ponder. But even within this defensive propaganda there is contained a threat to America herself, and to every nation which has felt the stifling pains of an uncontrollable revulsion over what Japan has done to the Chinese people. The almost unanimous stirring

of Americans, English and the peoples of other countries bespeaks a world-wide condemnation of these vile barbarians. The spontaneous anti-Japanism of America might also attract the stern attention of Japanese militarists, who might resent your lack of cooperation. That threat for the moment applies to China alone, but who can say when this strange attitude might not find expression in action against other peoples?"

"During the last decades Japanese imperialism has invaded our country and robbed us of our territories. Without recounting the long history of her consistent brigandage against us, the last six years of Japanese aggression has brought its fateful climax in the guns now booming in Shanghai and North China. The world can well remember the invasion of Manchuria, the Shanghai War of 1932, the steady march of Japanese imperialism by provocation, intrigue and murder into the province of Jehol, Chahar and North Hopei. It was America who initiated the international conference at Washington attended by the great world powers, where Japan was made to accept the agreement which respected Chinese territorial and administrative integrity and the Open Door policy. Yet the signatories of the Briand-Kellogg Pact and the Nine Power Treaty have impotently watched the transgression of these treaties, signed by Japan, and have made no attempt to stop Japanese militarists in their mad venture to subjugate China. Is it necessary to remind the world that the Tanaka Memorial, the Bible of every Japanese militarist, is a program for the conquest of all Asia, which takes precedence over any treaty?"

"It would be difficult to relate in a few words why China was weak and Japanese militarists were able to overrun our territory. Briefly, the impotance of our nation during the past ten years was caused by internal struggles and civil warfare. The great nationalist movement which swept over China in the years 1923-1927, under the leadership of Dr. Sun Yat-sen, unified the country into the beginnings of a great, cohesive nation. One Chinese warlord after another was overthrown. Under the guidance of Dr. Sun Yat-sen China was on the path leading to a strong, democratic state. But great misfortune befell the Chinese nation in the death of Dr. Sun. His teachings and principles—Nationalism, Democracy and People's Livelihood—were lost sight of in the civil wars in which the sons of China fought brother against brother, with the attendant destruction of the country and the impoverishment of the Chinese masses. That is why Japan could seize Manchuria and the four Northeastern provinces, and could continue her invasions upon our soil. Only Japan profited from our internal dissensions."

"When in July Japan flung her troops across North China she contemplated the seizure of another large slice of our territory. The Yangtze Valley was the next objective, and at Shanghai was amassed a terrific force to capture this city and its environs for further Japanese penetration. But they have failed. Against their might of ships and guns, against their mechanized armies and planes, our people pitted their brave hearts, their flesh and blood to halt this mad invader. Japanese bombs destroy our cities, our cultural institutions, universities; their maniacal fury is felt by the humblest in our land in their wanton killing of women and children. Yet for all their fury and all their might I can proudly affirm for our people that these Japanese militarists will meet their doom on our soil. The disparity of arms is more than compensated by the mass anger of our people who are ready for the ultimate sacrifice in defence of our land.

"In the last three years the anti-Japanese movement has gained tremendously in strength. Chinese workers, peasants, intellectuals, during these years united in salvation associations for organizing the country for resistance. Coincident with this movement came a great transformation in our national consciousness. We grew conscious of our great Chinese nation as an indivisible entity against which Japanese intrigue proved powerless. As Japanese troops invade our soil, and Japanese planes rain their death from our skies, all parties, groups and organizations have forgotten their past differences and have united into one solid front for a sacred war of resistance. Civil warfare has ceased. All internal differences have been merged, and the bitterest enemies in the country, General Chiang Kai-shek and General Chu Teh, shook hands in Nanking. The latest Japanese aggression became the catalyst which amalgamated all our resources and all our strength to resist this enemy. Now the former Red Army, organized as the Eighth Route Army, is fighting as an integral unit of the national army of the country. Its first engagement with the Japanese invader has already resulted in a smashing victory. The unification of our country has become our tower of strength against which the Japanese invaders can fling their might in vain."

"If need be we will fight with our strength alone to stop this Japanese fascist invader. But we have heard the world's expressions of sympathy and rejoiced that we were not alone in our dark hour. The world's denunciations of the ghastly deeds of the Japanese murderers brought comfort to our tortured souls. I have no doubt but that the heart of all America beats in sympathy with our struggle for freedom and independence. We know that we are not fighting alone. We know that our struggle against these fascist marauders is not only our battle, but the battle of all those who still value the cause freedom and democracy."

"The spontaneous desire to give tangible evidence of your hatred of these fascist monsters

by boycotting all Japanese products is of immeasurable help to us in our cause. But there are more immediate needs. Not a single ship should leave American shores with cargo for Japan, for every scrap of your products is converted for use against us. The funds you send us are essential to our struggle, but of greater importance is that a steady stream of munitions and arms to equip our armies be organized. We need arms,—powerful arms,—against this powerful enemy. Let the overwhelming force and voice of righteous American public opinion sweep throughout the world. America need not go to war to destroy this fascist menace in the Far East. The soul-stirring declaration of President Roosevelt epitomized the world's moral condemnation of the deeds of these international hoodlums. Rally to his leadership and help him convert his words into action which will stop this bloody conflagration before it consumes every nation of the world. I appeal to the American people to assume leadership in this holy crusade and I am confident that you will not fail us."

October 21

A squadron of 34 Japanese planes raided Nanking at 12:30 p.m. and again at 1:30 p.m., dropping bombs at Ta Kung Chao and also on the Tientsin-Pukow Railway Wharves. The wharves are stated to have escaped damage but several houses near Ta Kung Chao were demolished. Loss of life was not known tonight.

Soochow was bombed at eight this morning and a passenger train hit with 20 deaths resulting. At Hsiachow Station on the Shanghai-Hangchow railway a Hangchow bound train was bombed this morning and one coach demolished, killing two persons. Tanyang, on the Nanking-Shanghai railway, was raided for the third successive morning by eight Japanese planes apparently turned away from Nanking on the approach of Chinese pursuit planes. At the same time Hsihsiachu, northwest of Changchow, was bombed by three Japanese planes.

Chinese raiders bombed Wayside and Yangtzepoo are nine times last night, one bomb setting fire to the Ewo Cotton Mill which was still burning this morning. Other damage could not be ascertained today.

A Japanese biplane bomber was brought down by Chinese anti-aircraft fire at 10:00 a.m. near Hwatsaochen in western Shanghai. The plane fell into a creek and the pilot's body was fished out by Chinese troops. The plane was stated to be the third downed by the Chinese in three days on the local front. The Markham Road-Central Mint area seemed to be the favored spot for Japanese bombing operations again today as operations against the area went on all day. A huge fire was started at 3:00 p.m. just across the Creek from the Union Brewery in what was believed to be the Lee Tai oil tanks and black clouds of smoke rolled into the sky. Heavy bombing of the Tazang area was observed throughout the day.

Shelling of the Chapei district was constant all day with Paoshan coming in for exceptionally large shells from some Japanese source. Exchanges of rifle and machinegun fire were heard in this spot in the early morning hours.

The Chinese report a big thrust against Japanese positions in Kiangwan with small gains accomplished by tonight. The Japanese are reported retreating toward Chimei Road. The Japanese report the Chinese lines broken through in three places on the banks of Yanching creek after a bloody battle which followed a terrific artillery barrage.

Chinese troops have succeeded in reaching Yenmenkwan, cutting off Japanese forces in north Shansi from those in Hopei and Suiyuan provinces. The victories were won by the Eighth Route Army of former Communists. Tension along the Manchurian border and in Manchukuo is said to have held up Japanese reinforcements in this area. In north Honan, Japanese forces have reached the south bank of the Chang River. Japanese units in Shantung for political reasons unspecified are retreating to the north according to a foreign report.

October 22

During the bombing of west Chapei this afternoon the writer witnessed the dropping of another Japanese bomb within the Settlement, this time to kill two and wound about 20. Three Japanese planes had been bombing across the Creek and when circling one of the planes broke formation to fly over the Settlement and drop the bomb which fell at the corner of Sinza and Myburgh Roads to burst with a great flame. There was no apparent reason for dropping this bomb since no others had been or were dropped anywhere near the spot. From the nature of the explosion and the fragments picked up it is believed that the missile was an incendiary bomb.

A plane engaged in bombing operations over Pootung was observed to wobble badly and lose altitude after having been in the midst of anti-aircraft fire for several minutes. The plane glided down rapidly and disappeared behind the Power Co. plant. It was one of three engaged in bombing the area about three quarters of a mile east of the Pootung Electric Supply Co. The area around the Central Mint again came in for heavy bombing this morning and afternoon and the severe bombing of Tazang district kept up all day, the Japanese planes seeming to be concentrating on a line about a mile to the west of the village. Routine bombing of the whole of Chapei was seen all day and at 4:45 in the afternoon three planes were power-diving and bombing Pootung some distance back from the river. Heavy shelling near Liuhong and at a point north of the North Station on the railway line was observed during the afternoon while occasional shells fell all over Chapei during the day.

Chinese forces in a series of fierce attacks succeeded in driving back the Japanese from their positions on the southern edge of Wentsaopang

yesterday. Casualties on both sides were heavy. Meanwhile the Japanese today penetrated to within 2800 yards of Tazang but are in danger of having their rear cut off as a result of this new Chinese thrust.

Japanese bombing operations in Soochow yesterday killed 11 and wounded 30 when a refugee boat train and a passenger train were bombed. A locomotive and two coaches were destroyed by Japanese airmen at Hsiachow Station yesterday. A recheck on the damage at Nanking as a result of yesterday's raids reveals that the Tsinpu Ferry Wharf, stated to be undamaged, was actually severely damaged and repairs will take some time.

In the north, reports from the opposing armies were conflicting, with victories claimed by both sides in the same areas. Yenmen Pass was reported retaken by the Eighth Route Army which now has effected a junction with troops in the north.

October 23

An incredible explanation was made by the Japanese today for the bombing of Sinza Road yesterday. The statement had it that an emergency gas tank was dislodged from one of the bombing planes and blown across the Soochow Creek by the wind.

Tazang and the area north of the Settlement near the Mint were still the regions most heavily bombed and shelled today, scarcely any rest being given to objectives in the two zones. Chapei generally came in for its share of the bombs during the day and Pootung was rather more heavily bombed than customarily, two areas being worked on: one mile east of the N. Y. K. Wharf; and two miles southwest of Pootung Point. More than ten house were destroyed at the latter location when the bombs fell at 9:30 this morning.

In the bombings of west Chapei near Chungshan Road a village, Doochiache, was destroyed and several villagers killed and wounded. This whole area was heavily shelled throughout the day as was also the area near the Southern Baptist Mission School. Heavy artillery also pumped high explosives along a line one mile west of Tazang and in the vicinity of Liuhong. The rain of high explosives at these two points has been constant for the last few days.

Chinese insist that Kwangfu, east of Kating, is still in their hands and further claim an advance yesterday of 1000 yards towards Liuhong, pushing the Japanese back to the Wooden Bridge. The Japanese report gains toward Nanziang as they drove back the main Chinese defense force entrenched along this line. Fighting has been sanguinary along this line during the past 24 hours with the Japanese tanks and armored cars helping to follow up breaches in the Chinese ranks caused by heavy artillery.

British troops are reported to have fired into the air to stop an attempt by Chinese troops to enter the Settlement at Keswick and Tunsin Roads. Fighting along the Paoshan Road line was confined to a shot now and then as both sides appeared to be using their strength on the Nanziang-Luhong line.

Chinese forces are reported to be in retreat on the Hopei-Shantung border along the Cheng-tai Railway, with Japanese aircraft harassing the retiring troops. Taiyuan was raided five times during the day by Japanese planes yesterday with many casualties resulting. Japanese advances along all North China fronts excepting Shansi are admitted by the Chinese military today.

Nanking this morning had three air raid alarms, two of which proved to be false. On the one raid that was made, eight Japanese planes dropped bombs near the airdrome in the southern suburban district of the capital causing slight damage.

Chekiang was raided six times during the day yesterday with 20 being killed as native junks on the waterfront of the Chientang River were bombed. The Soochow-Kashing Railway was again bombed yesterday but only slight damage resulted. Total deaths from Japanese air raids on this line to date are 600 according to Chinese investigations.

The Canton-Hankow Railway was again bombed yesterday as four Japanese planes dropped 11 bombs on the Shuenping and Wanglik Stations.

In regard to the shelling of junks in the vicinity of Hongkong, the Foreign Office spokesman in Tokio today stated that the Chinese themselves admitted that the junks carried small cannon and that they were therefore pirate junks.

October 24

Biggest news of the day was the Japanese advance to 1000 yards of Tazang, the fall of which is generally believed to entail the withdrawal of Chinese forces from Chapei. The Japanese state that the Chinese have already begun their retreat from Chapei and Kiangwan but this the Chinese deny. The artillery and aerial bombardment of the Chinese positions near Tazang is plainly visible from the Settlement and seems to be increasing in force with a barrage of terrific intensity being laid down. In spite of this the Chinese are still entrenched and holding back the Japanese infantry. Reinforcements have been sent to the front for the Chinese defenders at this point and Chinese authorities are confident that the Japanese advance will be checked.

Japanese troops also advanced about 700 yards in the vicinity of Chenchiachong, about six miles northeast of Nanziang. Further north the Japanese have made still another advance in the neighborhood of Kwangfu, which they claim to have taken, although the Chinese state that the village is in Chinese hands.

Japanese pilots got up early this morning to start bombing the North Station area before 9:00 a.m. At 10:00 a.m. Tazang was being bombed by 15 Japanese planes and from then on this area had

no respite from the bombs throughout the day. Bombing near the Settlement was exceptionally heavy throughout the day with the Paoshan Road-Commercial Press area sharing the brunt of the attack with the area near the Mint. Japanese warships and shore batteries threw shells into the areas north of the Creek all day and two small fires were observed to start along Jukong Road. The area back of the N.Y.K. Wharf in Pootung was also shelled during the morning and just before noon three Japanese seaplanes bombed this spot.

Late yesterday afternoon Japanese planes bombed the Chungchen Bridge spanning the Kan River in Kiangse and slightly damaged the structure while killing nine persons and wounding seven. Soochow was bombed 12 times yesterday and Wusih was also visited by the Japanese airmen. Damage to the two cities was not revealed. Six Japanese planes were stated to have been turned away from Nanking yesterday by Chinese pursuit planes and anti-aircraft fire. The Canton-Hankow Railway was again the object of Japanese bombs yesterday, four visits being made. During the day raids on Taiyuan, Hsuchow, Hangchow and Anking were also made.

Japanese gains on all fronts in North China are again reported for today with a big attack against Taiyuanfu declared imminent. Admitting "some trouble" in Shansi, the Japanese state that their lines are intact in the one northern province for which no gains were reported.

October 25

Japanese army, naval and air units combined today in a concerted drive against all Chinese positions in the local zone and a huge battle is raging all along the line from Lotien to Tazang. In the Kiangwan area the Japanese naval forces are gaining steadily with the pressure of a barrage from the naval guns aiding their advance, but the most important battle from a strategic standpoint is going on in the streets of Tazang as the Japanese troops have entered the town from the north. Japanese artillery which aided the advance of the troops along the Tazang line is avoiding the town for fear of hitting Japanese troops and Chinese and Japanese are engaged in a desperate house-to-house fight with armament equal on both sides. The Japanese heavy artillery is shelling the Tazang-Nanziang highway to prevent the bringing up of Chinese reinforcements and the thunder of big guns and aerial bombs is plainly audible in the Settlement tonight. The Japanese appear to be advancing along all fronts excepting Chapei and aerial bombardment of all Chinese positions including the rear has been too constant to detail. In addition the Japanese appear to be pumping shells out of every gun they possess in this area. This is the "big push." Shells falling in the Concession today from an unidentified source klIled one and wounded 10.

Chinese planes again carried out a number of raids over the Yangtzepoo district last night around midnight to the usual accompaniment of spirited and spectacular anti-aircraft fire.

With dead numbering 10,000 so far in the Japanese counter-attack in northern Shansi, the Japanese are reported to have thrown their last reserve units into the attack in an attempt to dislodge the Chinese from Nanhuaihua, Kuantsun and two other sectors. A lull has been reported in the operations in eastern Shansi. The important Niangtzekwan Pass on the Hopei-Shansi border was visited yesterday by Japanese planes which rained tons of explosives on the Chinese positions below in an attempt to make a breach through which Japanese troops could pass. The Japanese attack on all northern fronts seems to be slowing down in its ground-gaining.

Rifleman McGowan of the First Royal Ulster Rifles was killed and several foreign civilians were forced to abandon their mounts and run for cover when a riding party on Keswick Road was made the target of a machinegun attack by a Japanese plane yesterday afternoon at 3:30 p.m. The plane attacking the party broke out of formation and dived on the riders, firing on them from a height of 100 feet. All the riders went for cover and then the plane returned to machinegun Post Q of the British defense lines. In the second or third attack on the post the British soldier was killed and very shortly after the corporal in charge of the post gave orders to fire on the plane. It then returned to its flight but not before firing on Post P.

Investigations into the incident have been completed and the apologies of the Japanese Government tendered, but local British authorities refuse to comment, stating that the matter has been referred to the home government. Protests were made today to the Japanese by Admiral H. E. Yarnell on the frequent flights of Japanese planes over American Marine sectors. Calling attention to the frequent injuries in the area under Marine control the note presented asked that something specific be done toward remedying the situation.

The last advices tonight detail the killing of 200 Chinese and the wounding of 400 others when Japanese planes bombed Sungkiang, Kiangsu.

October 26

The last of the Chinese defenders was driven from Tazang shortly before noon today as the Japanese broke through the Nanziang-Tazang highway and menaced the Chinese by a flanking movement on the left wing. Chinese troops at Miaohong have retreated to north Kiangwan and heavy fighting is going on in this sector. At least 15,000 reinforcements were observed to be moved up to the front this afternoon along Chungshan Road to aid the Chinese troops in the lines. They passed thousands of wounded going back from the lines along the same road. Japanese aircraft were bombing Chinese positions all along the Tazang-Nanziang line throughout the day and these Chinese positions and area

back of the lines were also under heavy shell fire, much shrapnel being observed to break over the lines. Chinese are still in Chapei and Kiangwan and experienced a fairly quiet day with desultory operations being carried out against them by planes and artillery. The Chinese insist that no withdrawal from these positions is contemplated although foreign observers believe that a Chinese retreat from Chapei is inevitable now that Tazang has fallen.

The Lewis guns in the British outposts were equipped today with anti-aircraft sights after the shootings by a Japanese plane yesterday which caused the death of one British Tommy. Japanese planes continued to fly over the Settlement however, one flight passing directly over the Central District while the funeral of Rifleman McGowan was in progress. The planes swung over the Bund and then over Pootung where they dropped six bombs.

Soochow, Hangchow, Ningpo and Kwangtung were raided by the Japanese airforce yesterday. Nanking was visited by nine heavy Japanese bombers which dropped several bombs on the outskirts of the city. Tsinan, Kashing and Changchow were also raided during the day while a night raid was made on Hankow.

The Japanese are still advancing toward Taiyuanfu and are reported to have secured a foothold in Niangtzekwan Pass. Guerrilla warfare is going on constantly. Guerilla warfare is also going on in the northern districts under Japanese military occupation and the Japanese lines of communication are said to be sorely tried by the Chinese tactics. The Chinese airforce is reported to be aiding operations of the Eighth Route Army in north Shansi with successive raids on defense positions.

October 27

Chapei is in flames tonight as the whole of the district from Hongkew to Jessfield Park burns with fires set by the Chinese troops who have evacuated. The Administration Building, Commercial Press, Kiangwan and other Chinese strongholds were all displaying Japanese flags by 8:00 a.m. as the advancing Nipponese rapidly took over street after street with opposition only from isolated units trapped in the disorder. Chungsan Road and the outlying roads along the Settlement boundaries were packed with retreating Chinese troops and refugees all morning.

Shrapnel burst constantly over the heads of the people in the choked roads and the whole of the Nipponese air force seemed to be out in the western district bombing and machinegunning the troops below. At 8:30 a.m. Chinese anti-aircraft fire scored a hit on a Japanese plane about one quarter-mile northwest of the Mint and the writer observed it fall in flames leaving a long trailing stream of smoke in the sky for some time.

In the afternoon the Japanese planes and artillery moved their fire westward to the Jessfield and Hungjao area and systematically strafed the area to which the retreating Chinese had moved.

Two Japanese planes were observed to collide in midair over Jessfield at 2:57 this afternoon. One plane plunged to the ground with its occupants while the pilot of the other descended in a parachute. Landing in a small village he was literally torn to pieces by the infuriated villagers who had been the targets for aerial bombardments and machinegunning too long for forbearance.

Isolated units of Chinese are still in Chapei cut off by the wall of flame over the western area.

Since early morning, the Settlement Fire Department has been maintaining first-aid station on Brenan and Jessfield Roads near the railway station to care for the wounded Chinese civilians who reached the boundaries at this point. By tonight some 200 had been carried off to Settlement hospitals in addition to those with minor wounds treated on the spot and at least that many is believed to have been killed from bombings in that area.

The Settlement Fire Deparment has been throwing water on the buildings on the west side of North Thibet Road to prevent the fires raging there, the largest in Chapei, from spreading into the Settlement. Chinese troops cut off from their main body entered the two godowns of the Joint Savings Society and the Continental Bank with the presumed intention of passing out through the south doors of the building and so gain Soochow Creek without passing over North Thibet Road. By this time however the Japanese were in full control of the roadway along the Creek and the Chinese battalion was imprisoned in their fort-like godown buildings where they are still holding out tonight.

The men are members of the 88th Division left behind the main body of retreating Chinese soldiers to form a rear guard. Tonight their strongholds are within a ring of burning buildings on three sides while Soochow Creek bounds the south edge of the godowns. The Japanese are firing machinegun bursts at the west and north walls from vantage points, chief of which is the godown of the Commercial Bank 60 yards to the west, while the Chinese are throwing back occasional rifle and machinegun bursts.

Soochow, Hsuchow, Sunning, Kashing and Nanking were all visited by Japanese bombers yesterday. At Nanking the planes bombed the airdrome to the south of the city twice before retiring.

Japanese troops in north Shansi are reported to be cut off by the Chinese possession of the two strategic passes of Yenmen and Pingsingkwan. The Japanese are at present engaged in a major attack on the last-named Chinese stronghold in an effort to cut their way out.

October 28

The Chinese within the two godowns on the bank of Soochow Creek have attained headlines in

all of the local newspapers. Their fastness has been termed the "Shanghai Alcazar" while the men are being called the "Doomed Battalion." Fighting between the men within the godown and the Japanese encircling them has been going on at intervals throughout the day with the Japanese apparently making no determined effort to take the buildings by assault, a proceeding which would undoubtedly cost them many men as the godowns are natural forts. The Japanese have, however, stated that unless the men get out they will be forced to take strong measure, a statement interpreted here to mean aerial bombardment or artillery fire. The beleagured Chinese can escape at any time by simply throwing down their arms and walking into the Settlement.

At one time during the siege of the Chinese today the writer observed three Japanese soldiers creep along the south wall of the building from a sandbag emplacement at the southwest corner. One of the soldiers was in the act of raising his gun to batter in a window when a Chinese arm appeared in one of the third story windows to drop a grenade which burst in the street directly behind the Japanese soldiers.

The two godowns are still ringed with fire and Chapei as a whole is still burning although the fires appear to have died down. During the day a few new fires were observed to have started up, but only smoldering ruins remain of the largest fires of yesterday and last night.

The Chinese are now entrenched along the south bank of Soochow Creek to the west of the Settlement and the Japanese have made as yet no determined attempt to cross the Creek. Some fighting along this line was reported between the Chinese troops and Japanese tanks on the north bank of the Creek. In these exchanges the line of refugees again came undr fire and several casualties resulted. The main Chinese defense line now runs from the Jessfield border of the International Settlement to a point near Kiangchiao along the south bank of Soochow Creek and then across the river to Shaonanziang north-east of Nanziang. From Shaonanziang the line runs to Liuho via Kwanfu and Tungchiao, east of Kating. In the wake of the retiring forces yesterday a group of Chinese soldiers was left in the town of Chenju which was then set afire by the advancing Japanese. The whole of the Chinese new lines came in for heavy shelling all day with the heaviest being noted between 8:00 and 9:00 a.m. A Japanese bomber dropped three bombs at 9:30 a.m. in the Brenan Road area and along Chungshan Road to start the aerial activities of the day, but on the whole few bombs were dropped long the new lines.

Listing Japanese dead on both the North China and Shanghai fronts since the start of hostilities as 9,640, the Japanese War Ministry in its official release gives 105,970 as the total of Chinese deaths on the fronts.

Wusih, Soochow, Kashing and Nanking were all raided by Japanese airplanes yesterday in operation described by the press spokesman as "routine."

Japanese successes are reported from Shansi in wires which have the Nipponese troops rapidly nearing the provincial capital, Taiyuanfu. Chinese report advances along the Chang River with their troops advancing into Hopei from the Honan border.

Great Britain has accepted the apologies of Tokio for the Keswick Road shooting incident in which a British soldier lost his life.

October 29

Someone smuggled a huge Chinese flag into the two godowns holding the Chinese "Doomed Battalion" last night and Shanghai awoke this morning to see the flag waving from the mast atop the buildings. It is easily larger than any Japanese flag in the vicinity and from its high perch it looks down on every Japanese-held building in the vicinity. Sporadic firing between the Chinese in the buildings and their Japanese besiegers has been going on all day and throughout the evening. The roofs of buildings in the Settlement near the struggle are lined night and day with watchers awaiting developments.

An international incident was nearly precipitated this afternoon when two Japanese pinnaces manned by bluejackets attempted to pass through the British sector on Soochow Creek, presumably with the intention of attacking the battalion in the godowns. Brigadier-General Telfer-Smollett and high ranking officers of other nations were called into the discussion before it ended just where it had started—with the pinnaces refused permission to pass up the creek.

At the front a major battle is raging at Kiangchiao, southwest of Nanziang, which forms the right wing of the troops defending Nanziang. Another battle is being fought at Shaonanziang, which forms the left wing of the Chinese troops defending Nanziang. The Chinese are so far holding their own against the advancing Japanese at these points. These two battles form the main activity along the new Chinese lines.

Japanese planes dropped a few bombs during the day on the new Chinese positions, but for the most part confined their activities to reconnaissance. They were kept at quite a height by strong machine-gun and anti-aircraft fire from the ground. The Japanese-owned Toyoda Cotton Mill on Soochow Creek in the western area is occupied by Chinese snipers who have caused the Japanese much trouble and this afternoon several hits were observed to have been made on the building by Japanese shells. Chinese batteries were active in shelling Japanese positions all through the day.

Sungkiang was subjected to two raids by Japanese airmen at 8:00 a.m. today when 20 Japanese planes dropped over 100 bombs, to kill and injure

a large number of civilians, according to a foreign eye-witness report today.

Chinese forces in the north are now defending Yangchan in a desperate effort to check the Japanese advance. A Chinese cavalry unit made a swift attack on Kwangwuchen, about 10 kilometers north of Taihsien, and routed 800 Japanese defenders. Chinese troops are pouring to the rear on troop trains from Niangtzekwan Pass with Japanese aircraft strafing their retreat. A new state, "The Autonomous Government of Inner Mongolia," has been formed by a so-called national assembly of Mongols at Suiyuan under Japanese supervision.

Madame Chiang Kai-shek is recuperating in her home in the Concession from injuries received in a motorcar accident on the Shanghai-Nanking highway a few days ago, it was learned today. A tire burst caused the car to veer, throwing the wife of the Generalissimo into a creek and inflicting minor injuries.

October 30

Marking the resumption of air raids made by Chinese planes on Japanese positions in the Shanghai area for some time, two silver-colored monoplanes flying at a great height were observed to bomb the vicinity of the Naval Landing Party Barracks today. The planes came in from two directions, Chenju and directly over the Settlement.

Early this morning 5,000 Japanese troops attacked Chinese positions north of Soochow Creek. The Chinese line along Chichiaku, Panche and Taichiache was placed under heavy fire but the attack was driven off. Artillery smashed at Chinese positions to precede an infantry attack which was also beaten off. Following a slow advance by the Japanese yesterday, Japanese planes again bombed Chinese positions in Nanziang and south of the Creek. The Chinese line now stretches from Kiangkiao to Nanziang in the north and to Chenchiakuo in the south. Sporadic clashes were reported this morning as the Chinese abandoned outposts impossible to hold and dropped back to their main line of defense. A number of bombs were dropped by Japanese planes along Lincoln Road between Warren and Rubicon Roads outside the Settlement. Another area west of Jessfield was also bombed.

The heaviest fighting on the local front took place today on Soochow Creek when members of the "Doomed Battalion," stated to have completed their defensive preparations, fired upon all Japanese in the vicinity. The Chinese have poked holes through the west wall through large black characters painted there and the new vantage points command the Japanese positions on the Commercial Bank Godown to the west. Several Japanese were seen by the writer to be hit before they realized the danger. Subsequently, the Japanese rained machinegun bullets furiously on the wall but had difficulty in finding the loopholes because of the black background. In the face of rifle-fire and grenades breaking over the roof, the Chinese raised another flag which has been in position all day.

Biggest news of the day was the killing of three British soldiers in the western district last night when shells from a source as yet unidentified fell in the Jessfield area. Two other British soldiers are in a critical condition from the shellfire. British, Chinese and Japanese authorities are not as yet ready to make a statement although the Japanese spokesman stated as his belief that the shells were fired by Chinese batteries with a view to estranging Japan and the foreign powers here.

Japanese advances all along the northern fronts are announced today.

Further details on the bombing of Sungkiang yesterday list the dead and injured as over 100 with property damage extensive.

October 31

The "doomed battalion" dashed out of their stronghold under a fusillade of machinegun bullets at 2:15 his morning, surrendered their arms to the waiting Settlement police who took charge of them. The concerted attack, which came with a dramatic suddenness exactly at midnight, was too much for them. The Japanese used three batteries to advantage which coupled with machinegun and rifle fire made the godown untenable. Tracers and incendiary bullets mingled with the flash of exploding shells made the place look like a veritable inferno, while the racket attracted most of the residents of both the Settlement and Concession to windows and roof-tops. The endless stream of burning bullets and red hot shell splinters ricochetting off the walls gave it an aspect of a fireworks display, while a fire that eventually broke out added to the rare sight. And it was evident that many were the bullets and shells that missed their marks as the burning missiles sizzled over the rooftops in the near vicinity.

For two hours the bombardment kept up with the shell fire never silent for more than a few minutes. The Chinese troops from within the buildings, despite the cannonading, replied at regular intervals with their highspeed machineguns and frequently dropped hand grenades over the walls on the Japanese gunners below.

This battle was being fought on the very edge of the Settlement with British troops not 40 feet from the godowns in their sandbag emplacements doing their job of watching the Settlement borders. Two huge tanks containing supplies of industrial and domestic gas for the Settlement and Concession were across the Creek about 200 yards away and right in line of fire. One shell hit 20 feet away from the largest tank to mark the closest call, but machinegun and rifle bullets were constantly glancing off the round surface of the tanks.

The Marines on guard at the far side of the Creek received a share of the shell fragments and whole shells hit the walls of buildings behind them.

As the bombardment neared its climax at 2:00 a.m. the din became almost unbearable to those in the immediate vicinity. Even in the fitful light made by the glowing tracer bullets it could be seen that the shellfire had opened huge holes in the building. The machinegun tracers that went through these holes would pass completely through the building to whine off over the Settlement. Shells, which could not possibly have missed the building at that short range, now began to pass through it and fly into the Settlement, one hitting the Asia Life Insurance Co. offices and another landed on the Chartered Bank building, while several others exploded in the Whangpoo. The two buildings hit were but slightly damaged but the direction of fire, as shown by these hits and the shells which fell into the river, would have endangered the Idzumo if the angle of incidence had been a trifle greater.

Just before the end the Japanese increased their fire across the North Thibet Road Bridge. The previous occasional sprays of bullets which had been seen to hit the bridge or pass over it could have been strays but at this time the Japanese gunners sprayed the bridge constantly and also swept North Thibet Road with the double object of dissuading the Chinese from coming out and hitting those who attempted to leave. The garrison did venture out, however, a few minutes after 2:00 a.m. through a small tobacco shop at the rear of the building which gave them access to North Thibet Road and comparative safety. They ran at the double as they came out, some carrying wounded, some carrying large stocks of arms and ammunition.

In all, 327 soldiers came out unhurt, another 28 were wounded, while the survivors stated that they had left 100 comrades killed within the building. They brought out almost all of their large stores of arms and munitions which they turned over to the British troops before being transported to their concentration camp. Before leaving, the Chinese set fire to the building and judging from the smoke coming out of the windows tonight the fire seems to be spreading while Japanese forbade the Settlement Fire Brigade to aid in extinguishing it. Seen in the light of day the buildings today had a shattered appearance almost incompatible with the fact that troops stayed in them while the damage was done. The Japanese claimed today to have found large stocks of fresh foodstuffs left behind in the godowns and are raising the question of their origin, pointing out that the direction of origin must have been the Settlement and therefore the food must have passed through British hands. No comment was made by the British.

Early in the afternoon the Japanese gained a foothold on the south bank of the Creek after several previous attempts had been pushed back in bloody fighting. The soldiers advanced under cover of a smoke screen laid down after a terrific artillery barrage had paved the way for the Infantry who crossed the Creek 1500 yards west of the Jessfield Railway Bridge. Fierce fighting was also going on in the neighborhood of Rubicon Village where another attempt was made to cross. The Japanese are holding on to their new positions tonight while their artillery is blasting away at the Chinese positions. Artillery fire from both sides during the day was terrific. The Japanese airmen were unusually quiet this morning but went to work in earnest this afternoon, bombing almost continually. Locations visited by the planes were Weiting, Hwangtu, Chenyi, Soochow, Tsinpu and Pootung. Strong Chinese resistance encountered at Nanziang by the Japanese saw the day ending with no change in the lines in that area.

This morning Rifleman Robert Delaney, seriously injured during the shelling in Jessfield which claimed the lives of three of his fellows, died. Three more British soldiers were injured, one seriously, when shells struck the Jessfield Barracks in which they were sleeping early this morning. Later in the afternoon three more shells fell within the Settlement boundaries in the western area and 12 civilian casualties were reported for the day as a result of fragments and rifle bullets falling within the perimeter.

Chinese forces in east Shansi are causing the Japanese serious difficulties by their constant guerilla warfare. The attacks on Japanese lines of communication are rendered more easy by the mountainous nature of the terrain. Minor successes are reported for the Chinese there while in north Shansi they are reported to be holding their lines after repeated attacks on their positions by the Japanese. The Peiping-Hankow and Tientsin-Pukow fronts are relatively quiet today.

November 1

All of the residents of western Shanghai were awakened early today as a heavy artillery barrage was started by the Japanese before daylight on the Chinese positions south of the Creek. The barrage lasted from 2:00 a.m. until 4:00 a.m., at which time a lull in the activities was noted. After daylight the big guns opened up again with shells observed falling at Warren Piece, south of Lincoln Avenue; north of the Great China University, and northwest of Posingkun between Soochow Creek and the railway.

During the morning after the heavy cannonading, the Japanese made several attempts to cross the Creek at points from Rubicon Village to the Toyoda Cotton Mill. The Japanese claim to have successfully crossed after building pontoon bridges under heavy fire from the Chinese, but the Chinese state that in the few instances where the Japanese did cross they were driven back to the north bank. During the almost continuous fighting of the morning, bullets fell thickly within the Settlement in Keswick Road near Brenan and Great Western Roads.

On the eastern Shanghai front shells were also exchanged between batteries on Yulin Road and in Pootung with damage undisclosed. Japanese planes made frequent flights over Pootung, dropping few

bombs however. Other Japanese planes circled over the western district all day, flying low because of low-hanging clouds. Few bombs were dropped in this area, the planes seemingly being engaged in spotting out Chinese batteries.

In an interview released in Berlin today the commander of the Japanese forces in Shanghai, General Matsui, stated that the Brussels Conference would be useless since the Chinese would all be out of the Shanghai area within 10 days. He expressed the hope that Nantao and Pootung could be evacuated peacefully for the presence of Chinese troops in these two zones, especially in Nantao, could not be tolerated.

Japanese Marines at noon today provoked another international protest when they crossed Soochow Creek in the U.S. Marine sector to seize a junk load of rice which was being unloaded on the south side. Following the seizure they towed the junk to the Chapei side. The American naval authorities immediately protested and were given the sincere apologies of the Japanese. The American were assured that a shot fired by the Japanese during the proceedings was a blank.

Japanese today claim to have destroyed 11 Chinese planes during an air raid on Taiyuan, two of which were shot down in aerial combat. In east Shansi the guerilla warfare is continuing while the main Chinese force is entrenched at Nanchangshih, Nanchuan and nearby points awaiting the Japanese attack. Heavy fighting is now going on the Tientsin-Pukow Railway front in the Hanchiachi district.

November 2

A heavy bombardment with machinegun fire, audible through the explosions of shells was heard in the neighborhood of Brenan Village last night. This morning a few Japanese airmen went up to bomb Chinese positions south of the Creek despite the rain. The Japanese claim to be advancing south of the Creek after their crossings yesterday, while the Chinese state that all Japanese troops south of the Creek had been driven back to the north bank save in the one locality of Wuchiasa, where 300 Japanese hold out. A Japanese plane bombed Lunghwa sector at noon today, group up through a driving rain to drop six bombs on a locomotive near the Hsin Lunghwa station.

Japanese planes bombed Yangkadoo opposite the Nantao Bund and heightened the nervousness in Nantao which has caused the refugees from that area to crowd into the Concession. French troops today crossed into Chinese territory at Avenue Haig to occupy Nanyang University. No resistance was encountered from any Chinese soldiers who were supposed by Japanese allegation to be in possesion of the school. The 40 French soldiers hoisted the French flag and built redoubts on the campus. At present the school buildings and campus are being used as a refugee camp.

A general Chinese offensive to start within three days is expected in Shansi with the dispatch of reinforcements to the province to check the steady advance of the Japanese. The Japanese are reported to have captured Potow, putting two-thirds of the Shihchiaochwang-Taiyuan railway in their hands. Japanese planes were reported bombing extensively in Shantung and Yucheng.

The Soochow Creek incident yesterday, in which a rice-laden junk was seized by Japanese Marines while it was on the south side of the Creek, was considered closed by the American Marine command today with the return of the junk and its contents.

November 3

There was heavy shelling in the western districts last night, and this morning Japanese big guns dropped shells on Lincoln Road, Jernigan Road, Hungjao Road and nearby Chinese positions. An attempt by the Japanese to force a crossing of the Creek near Rubicon Village was witnessed by a foreign newspaperman, a veteran of the World War, who praised the valor of the soldiers on both sides. The Japanese had brought tanks to the north bank of the creek and under cover of their protective fire their troops tried six times to cross, but each time were driven back by machinegun fire from Chinese positions on the south bank after the withering Japanese fire. Casualties on both sides were heavy.

The main drive of the Japanese seems to be in the direction of Hungjao Airdrome with Monument Road as the proposed route. That the Japanese are making headway, despite Chinese assertions that few have crossed the Creek, seems to be assured with the Chinese withdrawal from Nantao. The retreat of troops and Paoantui from Nantao was first noticed last night and continued unabated today. They are leaving to escape being cut off, it is believed. Chinese positions in the western areas came in for heavy pounding by high explosives today, the Japanese planes doing a lot of bombing in the morning before the weather grounded them, and the artillery taking up where the planes left off for the balance of the day.

Chinese troop movements which appear to have the effect of thinning out the lines along Soochow Creek were puzzling observers today in view of repeated Chinese declarations that no withdrawal is contemplated. Major movements of troops in Pootung were also observed. Chinese branded as false, reports that their forces were retiring to the Quinsan-Tsinpu line. Pootung was heavily bombed by Japanese airmen this morning.

Meanwhile it was learned today that negotiations which were handled through a third party for the creation of a demilitarized zone which would take in almost half of the Chinese city of Nantao close to the French Concession are almost completed. The sole hitch in the negotiations now, it is learned, is the desire of the Chinese to leave one small pocket close

to the French Concession out of the demilitarized zone. The Japanese attitude, favorable to the scheme as a whole, on this point was quoted as being, "we refuse to allow the Chinese to make new 'heroes' at our expense," referring to the stand made by the "Doomed Battalion."

Chinese report that all save a few isolated detachments of Japanese have been cleared from the area south of the Chang River in Honan. In Shansi, Japanese are reported to have advanced further with the capture of two Chinese strongholds in the Hsihkow Mountains. In the eastern section of the province the Chinese counter-offensive is stated to be gaining ground.

An observer made a motorcar trip to Nanking today and a tour of inspection of the Capital City. Most noticeable change in the city was in the conversation which had changed from talk of business and food before the present hostilities to talk of air raids. Stated to be the best protected city in the world as far as air attacks are concerned, an inspection of the dugouts throughout Nanking it is stated would make this assertion a bit exaggerated. There are plenty of dugouts but for the most part they are flimsy affairs with board roofs covered by sand. That they are anything but safe was demonstrated during the day when a Japanese plane in attempting to hit the Ministry of Finance building dropped a bomb on a small Chinese house nearby. The bomb struck at least 10 yards away from a public dugout but it instantly killed 15 people who had sought refuge inside.

All of the Embassies are heavily fortified, the strongest among them being the Soviet. Here the dugout is constructed entirely of reinforced concrete additionally protected on top with sandbags. The roof alone is over eight yards thick. The dugout contains complete kitchen facilities, sleeping quarters, running water, telephone and electricity.

At a public park in the city in exhibit of over fifty Japanese planes had been set up. Some of the planes had been brought down by anti-aircraft fire while others had fallen to Chinese pursuit planes. While in the city, the sirens sounded in the afternoon to herald the approach of Japanese planes. Everyone went for cover and the cameramen set up their equipment in preparation. Shortly after a second alarm, 15 planes approached from the east. When quite close, the leading plane went into a power dive from about 2500 feet, releasing its bomb at the bottom of its dive, 500 feet from the ground. The bomb descended on a 45 degree line, passing directly over to burst about a block away in the middle of a group of refugees huddled together in a public square, taking a horrible toll of lives. Another plane dove and its bombs struck the Nanking Electric Company building directly across the street. Again and again the planes dove and released their bombs. One plane was hit in mid-air by an anti-aircraft shell and exploded with its load of bombs. Finally the raiders went away and the rescue squads and fire department appeared in the streets to clean up the wreckage in human bodies and property. The Electric Company was damaged, having been struck seven times during the raid, but the machinery was not damaged severely and service of a limited nature was available. Other buildings, including that of the British Lumber Company were damaged, but the city went right about its business after the raid.

The Brussels Conference of the powers of the Nine-Power Treaty opened today at 11:00 a.m. No reports of the deliberations of the first day have reached here yet.

November 4

An agreement on the proposed demilitarized zone in Nantao is believed today to be imminent as the Chinese presented four conditions on which they would accept the proposal. They are:

1. That the Chinese would not negotiate directly with the Japanese.
2. That the area is set aside solely for war refugees and is not a foreign concession in a different form and its establishment is not to violate Chinese rights.
3. The area, in which Chinese never stationed any troops, should not be attacked or bombed by the Japanese.
4. Peace and order in that area should be maintained by Chinese police and volunteer corps. No foreign troops may be sent to the area.

None of the conditions is believed to be opposed by the Japanese.

Japanese bombers were exceptionally active over the western front today, centering their activities over the Kaukung, south of Brenan Road area, and the vicinity of Brenan and Chungshan Road. Heavy shelling of the same areas in addition to the districts around Rubicon Inn, Rubicon and Brenan Roads, and Chungshan Road between Brenan and Lincoln Roads was done all day by Japanese batteries. Chinese anti-aircraft batteries were active all day against the planes while Chinese artillery did extensive shelling of Japanese positions. The weather was much clearer today and Japanese troops and aircraft took full advantage of the change. Japanese planes also bombed the hinterlands of Pootung in an attempt to put out of commission the Chinese batteries which have been harassing Japanese positions in Yangtzepoo as well as Japanese naval craft in the Whangpoo.

No major developments were reported along the lines on the local front. The Chinese assertion that but 380 Japanese soldiers had crossed the Creek was ridiculed by the Japanese spokesman who did not, however, state the number of troops which had actually crossed.

On a trip down the Whangpoo to Woosung today the writer counted 41 Japanese warships of all types in the river while another 42 lay off Woosung. During a four-hour observation off Woosung the writer saw

seaplanes in an unending parade from their mother ships in the river take off to bomb objectives out of sight, returning for fuel and more bombs before returning to the attack. There were six mother ships off Woosung, each seeming to serve five or six seaplanes. Woosung Village and the buildings at the mouth lay in a heap of ruins. Wooden supply sheds now sand on the site of the Forts Hotel with tons of supplies piled near them. Other piles of supplies were observed stacked up on the pier of the Whangpoo Conservancy Board at the mouth, and at the Jukong Wharf, which has been holed extensively. Trucks headed in the direction of Shanghai and others returning made an endless stream along the Woosung highway, while occasional staff cars threaded their way through the slower moving traffic. There is a military hospital at Woosung and convalescent soldiers could be seen with their bandages and crutches promenading all along the waterfront. Lying in the Whangpoo about half way back to Shanghai was a huge flying boat apparently used for transport work and gaudily camouflaged.

The Japanese troops who have been fighting their way through the mountains in Shansi have now entered a plain with the capture of Shouyang, 33 miles east of Taiyuanfu. The Chinese troops which have been holding out in the mountains north of Taiyuanfu are now in full retreat toward the south and the provincial capital is in a precarious position. The Chinese resistance in Shansi was today highly praised by the Japanese.

In Brussels as the American delegate insists on a new invitation being extended to Japan to attend the Nine-Power Conference now in session, Dr. Wellington Koo, chief Chinese delegate, made a speech, the moderate tone of which was remarked on in press dispatches. Sailent points of the address are here given:

"China wants peace, but she is determined to continue her resistance as along as Japanese aggression persists."

"China regrets that her rearming in recent years has not been more rapid or more extensive, so that she may offer more effective resistance and lessen the toll of suffering ruthlessly imposed on the Chinese people."

"The Japanese claim that the situation in the Far East is difficult for the Occident to understand. The only difficult point to understand is the persistent aggression of Japan not only in violation of her pledges but in opposition to her real self-interest."

"It does no credit to Japan, who always complains of the alleged lack of a stable and effective government in China, to have the civil part of her government give an assurance of her peaceful intentions one day only to be belied immediately by the actions of her military authorities."

"Peace at any price will neither render justice to China nor credit to civilization. Peace must be based on the principles of Article One of the Nine-Power Treaty. Knowing your devotion to the principle and sanctity of treaties, we assure you of the wholehearted collaboration of the Chinese Government."

November 5

Chinese today admitted a landing by Japanese troops estimated to number 100 at Chingshanwei, 25 kilometers north of Chapoo at dawn today. Covered by bombing operations of Japanese planes, the landing bluejackets came ashore in several small pinnaces. The Chinese claim that 50 of the force were killed and that the rest would soon be liquidated. The landing was believed to have been made with a view to disturbing the rear of the Chinese forces in Pootung.

An observer made a tour of the ruins of Chapei today in company with a group of newspapermen and photographers who had been invited by the Japanese to visit the area. At the corner of Paoshan and Boundary Roads a concrete pill-box was inspected. During the hostilities in this area a 1937 "Charlie Chan" had probably waited in this stronghold at almost the same spot where his famous predecessor started a legend in 1932—waited for the Japanese to break through the Chinese front line of defense. When the general advance came he was no longer there. The Commercial Press building was investigated and strong preparations for defense made by the Chinese were seen within the ruined building. Many books lay open at the desks in the basement. The building gave evidence of having been evacuated in a hurry with several hand grenades and potato mashers lying around. The party visited the North Station and Administration buildings and found them unchanged from the condition in which they were when a visit was made a week before the evacuation of Chapei. The guide indicated a spot on Kwangtung Road where 80 members of the Naval Landing Party repulsed an attack of 600 Chinese soldiers. The attack was stated to have been made on August 16 and one-third of the Japanese were said to have been wiped out in a desperate counter-attack. Markers in the ground listed the names of the men who had fallen—their ashes had been sent back to Japan.

Japanese gunners shelled a line running from 200 yards west of the Jessfield Station to south of Brenan Road today. The fire was coming from the Great China University. From north of St. John's University six inch shells were being directed at Chinese positions west of Poshingchin. Chinese batteries in the Hungjao area were shelling a lumber company and a match factory within the Japanese lines. Heavy fighting raged all along the western front today with the Japanese claiming slow advances and the Chinese stating that they had held up the enemy advance at all points. The heaviest fighting took place in the Monument Road area. Chinese deliberately set fire to Tung Wen College, and its buildings are still burning.

November 6

A Japanese seaplane engaged in operations over Pootung at 6:30 this morning crashed behind the Standard Oil installation, killing both occupants. Inasmuch as there are no Chinese anti-aircraft batteries in the vicinity the plane is believed to have developed engine trouble and made a forced landing. Another Japanese plane was stated to have been lost on Wednesday near Kating when a heavy bomber in a flight of eight, bombing the Chinese positions was hit by anti-aircraft fire and crashed. Its three occupants were killed.

The negotiations for the "peace zone" in Nantao have still not brought forth acceptance from both belligerents, the Japanese holding out for assurances from foreign powers that the zone will not be used for purposes other than those in the proposed agreement.

Japanese forces in north Shansi are closing in on Taiyuanfu with the Chinese retiring from their positions after offering stiff resistance.

The Japanese press announced today that a movement for a declaration of war is gaining ground in Japan. The move is stated to be advocated by the navy while the army, fearing international complications, looks upon it with disfavor.

In Brussels at the meeting of the signatory powers to the Nine-Power Pact a sub-committee was formed whose task will be to:

1. Draft a reply to the Japanese Note and memorandum which Tokyo sent to the Belgian Government in response to the original invitation.

2. Investigate the possibilities of Japanese co-operation, and

3. Eventually offer its good offices as mediator between China and Japan.

Mr. Norman Davis, the chief American delegate, made a vigorous rejoinder to a proposal made by Count Marescotti, chief Italian delegate, that the sub-committee propose that China and Japan enter into direct negotiations.

Reaching Kinshan on the banks of the Whangpoo, the Japanese detachment which landed yesterday in Hangchow Bay marched and fought over 33 kilometers to harass the Chinese rear.

Fighting on the Shanghai front was desultory today despite clearer weather. The rainfall of the past few days is believed to be holding up the Japanese mechanized units. Even the planes were inactive during the day, confining their operations to frequent reconnoitering flights over both the front and Pootung. Artillery fire from the Japanese was heavier than that of the Chinese but neither side laid down anything like a barrage. A brand new blimp was noticed over Chenju today and the report was out that the old one which has been seen all along the front for the past few weeks had been brought down by a Chinese sharpshooter. A Chinese marksman did bring down a small balloon which had been flying over the western area trailing a streamer informing Chinese troops that 1,000,000 Japanese troops had been landed in the bay north of Hangchow. A similar balloon flying over Hongkew was still aloft tonight.

Chuchia Creek, running parallel to Soochow Creek midway between that stream and Pierce Road on the south, is now the main Chinese line of defense in the western area. No major changes were reported along this line during the day but the Japanese are reported to have brought up reinforcements and are expected to attack when the weather clears.

It is now revealed that considerably more than 100 Japanese were successful in landing in the Hangchow Bay area yesterday and that they are steadily pushing on to cut the highway communications between Shanghai and the interior and so harass Chinese troops in western Shanghai and Pootung that a withdrawal to the so-called "Hindenburg Line," running from Hangchow Bay to the Yangtze via Sungkiang, Quinsan and Changshu, will be made.

Japanese troops have now reached the immediate outskirts of Taiyuan and a sanguinary battle for the possession of that provincial capital is being fought. Other Japanese units are pressing in from the east and the north and Chinese reinforcements have been thrown into the zone in an effort to prevent the fall of the city. The city has been bombed almost daily and is now repored to be all but deserted, the troops having left for the suburbs to oppose the Japanese. A ring of Chinese troops encircles the city while the Japanese are known to have passed Hsinhsien. Eighteen foreigners are in Taiyuan, including a staff correspondent of the United Press, Jack Belden. The others are all missionaries and include six children.

The plan for the creation of a safety zone in Nantao has been approved by both belligerents and will be put into effect in the course of the next few days.

A rumor reported by an American news agency to the effect that Adolf Hitler had been approached by Chinese and Japanese authorities to act as mediator in the Sino-Japanese hostilities caused a sensation in Brussels today. It could not be confirmed.

November 7

It was revealed today that the number of Japanese troops landed in Hangchow Bay and now advancing northward totals 30,000 men. They are engaged in a desperate fight with the Chinese reinforcements rushed north from Chapoo to Sungkiang. Japanese planes were in the air all day along this line of advance, bombing Sungkiang, Mishihtu, Sungyinchen and other concentration points of Chinese troops. Railway lines and stations and the highways were treated to a merciless rain of high-explosives from the sky. The three highways running to

Hangchow from Shanghai are all out of commission today. The Japanese spokesman today characterized the situation of the Chinese in the Soochow Creek and Pootung areas as being "like mice caught in a trap," and foreign observers state that if the reported Japanese successes along the southern front are true the statement is not exaggerated.

Japanese planes bombed the Lincoln Road area this morning despite the steady rainfall and some aircraft were up all day observing. Desultory artillery activities by both armies were observed and some rifle and machinegun fire heard, but on the whole the front was very quiet and no spirited battles were fought. The Japanese are reported to be awaiting the success of their flanking movement from the south to force a withdrawal of the Chinese from the Soochow Creek areas without the cost of Japanese lives on the local front.

In the north the Japanese claim to have entered Taiyuan while the Chinese, admitting that fighting on a serious scale is going on right outside the Shansi capital, state that the city is still held by Chinese troops. A foreign news agency reports the capture of the city by a cavalry detail which forced the north gate while infantry encircled the walls and aircraft bombed the defenders. The battle fought there is described by the agency as being the fiercest fought in North China to date.

Chinese report a raid on Japanese positions in Pingyang along the Tientsin-Pukow railway by a Chinese flying column which wiped out Japanese outposts and set afire a munitions dump before retiring. Fierce fighting is reported to be going on north of the Yellow River in northern Honan where the Japanese advance is stated to be held up by Chinese counter-attacks. Three Japanese planes were stated to have been brought down on this front on Thursday.

A note has been drafted by the Conference in Brussels in reply to Japan's note outlining her reasons for refusing to attend. The note embraces the reasons for the convocation of the meeting and the matters which will be dealt with.

C. M. Robertson, American mechanic, has been missing since the Japanese bombing of Pootung last Thursday and is believed to have perished. A search is now going on for his body in Pootung.

November 8

At 9:30 this morning Japanese troops, continuing their drive in the western area, crossed Lincoln Avenue and occupied Tsoukazah, capturing 10,000 hand grenades. Shelling and bombing of the western area was intense all day, with a terrific barrage being laid down on Hungjao Road at the Hangchow Railway, Columbia Circle and Lunghwa. After the artillery fire slackened off rifle and machinegun fire was heard to break out and a major battle is believed to be in progress there now as the Japanese attempt to force the Chinese positions. The Chinese are believed to be holding firmly along Hungjao Road although their defenses along Soochow Creek are believed to be crumbling. Large bodies of Chinese troops were observed today to be withdrawing from this area.

A foreign report today stated that a small Japanese detachment reached the Minghong Ferry at 11 a.m. after pushing their way north on the Hangchow Highway. Chinese troops from the Shanghai area have been rushed to meet the Japanese advance near Sungkiang and the Chinese in the vicinity are reported to be holding back the Japanese despite the constant bombing activities of more than 40 Japanese planes. While Japanese state that powerful reinforcements have reached their troops in their advance north from their landing in Hangchow Bay, the actual number of Japanese troops in the area is still in question. The figure of 30,000 given yesterday by foreign sources is declared by the Chinese to be preposterous. Private sources of the *Shanghai Evening Post and Mercury* today placed the figure at 6,000, naming the units in the field.

Pootung troops were reported today to have been ordered to retire to their second line of defense. Some major activity has taken place for thousands of Pootung civilians have crossed the Whangpoo into the Settlement. Nantao civilians are also apprehensive about the state of their locality for they have been pouring into the Concession since yesterday.

Taiyuan is reported completely in the hands of the Japanese today as units took over the south, east, and west walls to complete the circle begun yesterday when a detachment took the north wall. The Chinese are reported to be retreating southward.

November 9

The Japanese army completely encircled Shanghai today after a general withdrawal by Chinese troops from all areas near the Settlement, including Pootung and the western district, but excluding Nantao, where a Chinese detachment has remained in emulation of the "Doomed Battalion." The Japanese expect to commence operations against this unit shortly. The troops still in Nantao and near the waterfront in Pootung are believed to number about 10,000. Their presence in the areas is believed to be for the purpose of protecting the boom across the Whangpoo which closes the river to upward traffic.

The withdrawal was an orderly one commenced about midnight and completed at noon. Japanese batteries harassed the withdrawal of these troops by pounding away at their lines of communication to the rear. The new Chinese lines extend from Nanziang to Tsepao and thence to Liuho. It is believed that this line is but temporary and that the Chinese will shortly fall back on their main lines at Tsingpu unless Japanese advances in the Hangchow Bay area are checked. During the retirement about 300 Chinese soldiers, most of them wounded, entered the French Concession at Route Ghisi and were sent in trucks to the Red Cross and other base hospitals.

The Nantao safety zone was declared open for residence from 5:00 p.m. today.

In a trip out Hungjao Road through the British lines the writer observed well-built trenches and sandbag redoubts left behind by the retreating Chinese while here and there bodies could be seen, some of civilians. Japanese soldiers were scouring the entire area, inspecting all positions and entering some houses. Virtually all of the houses in the area appeared to have been entered and ransacked. The Japanese were observed bringing up a battery of 75's along the road, presumably to batter the Chinese in Nantao.

Seven Japanese planes bombed the Chinese unit in Nantao this afternoon and set fire to a huge oil tank. The smoke blackened the sky over the Concession. As in previous retreats by the Chinese, great fires lit up the western and southern areas as the Chinese withdrew, but by this afternoon they all appeared to be dying out.

The Japanese report the capture of Sungkiang after infantry and aerial attack while the Chinese state that the town is still in the hands of their forces. The towns of Tinglin and Yihsia are reported to be in flames. Heavy fighting is raging east of Fengchin between Sungkiang and Kashan, while Tsingpu, a base on the main line of Chinese defense, was bombed by 10 Japanese planes today and severely damaged. A number of towns in Chekiang were bombed yesterday.

Japanese troops have pushed on to Fengchow after the capture of Taiyuan yesterday, a 35 kilometer gain by a flying column. Japanese forces along the Peiping-Hankow railway have retreated and crossed the Chang River to the north, according to Chinese dispatches. Changteh a major northern Honan city, was reported captured by the Chinese.

While no reports of results attained at the meeting of the Nine-Power Conference in Brussels came through today, the possibility of Japan's attendance was discussed.

November 10

The war in Shanghai had its anti-climax when the expected Japanese attack against Nantao materialized at 2:30 p.m. with a squadron of bombers appearing over the thickly populated area to drop tons of bombs on the Chinese positions below. At the same time a heavy cannonading from Japanese batteries in the western districts was heard, shells falling into all section of Nantao. The planes came directly over the Settlement and Concession in an endless wave to start fires all over the Chinese city while the Japanese batteries fired shells directly over the foreign areas from their positions in Jessfield, Hungjao and Chapei to aid in the destruction. The din was frightful. Damage done was not known tonight and the total list of casualties had not been compiled. The raid lasted for 30 minutes while the shelling went on for over an hour.

During the course of the raid the Japanese planes dropped, in addition to the bombs, thousands of leaflets which drifted all over the Settlement, Concession and Nantao. A translation of the notes reads:

> *The aim of the Japanese army is to crush the Chinese troops, and to press the Nanking government to abandon its anti-Japanese policy, in order to build a foundation of peace in the Far East. We have no desire to harm non-combatants.*
>
> *When and if the Chinese troops begin to use Nantao and its vicinity as a military base, the Japanese cannot help attacking the Chinese troops in these areas. In such an event, we, the Japanese army, do not desire to harm the non-combatants who live in Nantao and its vicinity. We advise those who live in these areas to evacuate at the earliest possible moment to the safe district.*

Before the artillery and aerial barrage started at 2:30 p.m. the Chinese in Nantao this morning exchanged a few shots with the advancing Japanese whose first visible outpost was one half mile to the west of the Chinese who were strongly entrenched at the east side of Jihhui Creek. At 9:00 a.m. a Japanese tank was witnessed by the writer to advance to the creek where it joins Siccawei Creek and open fire on the Chinese positions. The Chinese returned the fire, forcing the Japanese infantry who had advanced behind the tank to retire on the double. The last bridge over the creek was still burning this morning and beginning to collapse.

Shelling from Japanese batteries commenced this evening once again at 6:00 o'clock. Shells are being fired from two batteries at intervals of about a minute between salvos, four guns participating in each salvo. At regular interval of five minutes a deep boom heralded the firing of a big gun in the distance and a split second later the whine of the projectile could be heard as it sped over the Concession. The explosions of the shells landing in Nantao are too faint and far away to be heard distinctly and it is deduced that the objective is somewhere near the French Bund, some five miles away.

The normal peacetime population of Nantao is about 600,000, many of whom had already left before this morning. Those who were caught in the city today, however, apparently had little faith in the newly created safety zone and stormed the Concession gates for admittance. Most of them were turned back at the barricaded gates and some of the scenes witnessed by the writer were pathetic. Others who produced proof of relatives in the foreign areas or showed employment there were permitted to pass.

Heavy fighting still goes on near Sungkiang with the city reported to be almost completely demolished by repeated Japanese air raids during the past few days. The Chinese today and last night are reported to have driven off the Japanese attacks. A battle

is reported to be raging near Minghong with the Chinese holding up the Japanese advance.

November 11

There appears to be no thoughts of Armistice Day in Shanghai as the cannonading to drive off the last of the Chinese troops is heard. As this is being written the roar of big guns and the explosions of shells is shaking Shanghai while rifle and machine-gun fire is incessant. Japanese gunboats have moved up the river to the Nantao Bund and are throwing shells at pointblank range into the buildings along the shore while Chinese in their hide-outs and from behind sandbags machinegun the Japanese ships. Planes are in the air constantly bombing and observing, and the whole of Nantao appears to be one big blaze from buildings set afire by the high explosives. The much-heralded Japanese landing in Pootung was made last night without any opposition from the Chinese along the point and further down river and the Japanese bluejackets are now pushing down the Pootung shore to give menace to the Chinese troops in Nantao from two directions. Junks ablaze are drifting down the Whangpoo.

While all this is going on, traffic on the French Bund and activities of a commercial nature are going on almost undiminished right to the Chinese city. The writer looked down the Bund toward the Chinese gates a few minutes ago, and despite shell and machinegun fires from the Japanese boats and machinegun fire from shore, the French Bund was still crowded. Trams were still going down the street unconcernedly right up to the point at which Chinese jurisdiction starts. From there on not a soul can be seen in the streets.

Earlier this afternoon the Chinese were slowly retreating from their position on Jihhui Creek after ruinous shellfire had made their position untenable. They now occupy the Kaochangmiao area in which is located the Kiangnan Arsenal and Docks and the Shanghai office of the Ministry of the Navy. The area is close to the French Waterworks. The terrific bombardment of the Chinese positions on the creek, witnessed by the writer, started at 11 a.m. when pandemonium seemed to break out as the Japanese threw shells of all sizes into the area. The one pounders mounted on Japanese tanks did damaging work on the Chinese redoubts and heavy machinegun fire drove the defenders out under a pounding impossible to withstand. About 500 Chinese troops, many of them wounded, passed into the French Concession about noon to be disarmed and taken away to concentration camps. By 1:30 no Chinese soldiers were observed by the writer in the area just south of Siccawei Creek and just west of Jihhui Creek. The Chinese defense, in the face of the devastating fire and a smoke screen which was laid down, was heroic in the opinion of the writer.

Chinese troops on Li Yuen Road opposite Avenue Dubail at 3:00 p.m. were resisting the Japanese advance along Loo Ban Road but withdrew at 2:30 p.m. coincidentally with the appearance of a large Japanese monoplane travelling over the French wall along Route de Siccawei.

Pembroke Stephens, war correspondent for the London Daily Telegraph and Morning Post, was shot and killed by Japanese machinegunners while viewing the battle from the French Waterworks water tower, at 2:30 p.m. Two other foreigners were wounded at the same time. The attack, witnessed by the writer and a member of the *Shanghai Evening Post & Mercury* who were in the line of fire, continued without interruption for a period of 20 minutes. The Japanese, it is understood mistook the waving of a hand for a signal to the Chinese, opened fire with a machinegun and Pembroke Stephens fell with a bullet in his head. Hundreds of rounds were spattered on the walls and roof of the tower before the Japanese ceased fire.

After the fire had ceased the party on the roof lay flat for some time before an American Marine Captain, noticing blood dripping to the ground, went up and discovered the blood-covered body. When the body of Pembroke Stephens was brought down it was noticed that an Armistice Day Poppy incongruously remained in his buttonhole.

Japanese claimed the downing of two Chinese Curtiss-Hawk planes on the Yangtze delta today. Japanese airmen did extensive damage in raids over Wusih and Nanking, with full details not available.

The Chinese still insist that Sungkiang is in Chinese hands but state that their lines to the east are menaced by advancing Japanese. Fighting of a severe nature is proceeding on this front.

From the north word was received that the Japanese advance southward in all provinces continues.

November 12

The war is over as far as the Shanghai area is concerned. It ended at 3:34 p.m. today when Japanese bluejackets took over the last Chinese stronghold in Nantao and ran up the Rising Sun flag. The last firing at the Japanese was heard at 3:15 p.m. but the Japanese cautiously advanced through the godowns which had been held by the Chinese and did not complete occupation until 3:34. Sporadic firing is still heard in Nantao tonight as the Japanese complete mopping-up operations.

The troops within Nantao had been ordered to withdraw last night and some 3,000 of them entered into the Concession. The men were disarmed in an orderly manner, however, and transported away from the borders in buses and trucks.

Fighting throughout Nantao and Pootung was confined to a clash here and there as the Japanese met isolated men, save in the region of the Bund, where a unit stated to number 300 held out against the Japanese gunboats and launches and machineguns on the boom until mid-afternoon. Fires are still burning all

over Nantao and in Pootung but the largest blazes have died down. Throughout the fighting in Nantao the safety zone set aside was not hit nor were its borders molested.

The hostilities in the Shanghai zone raged for 92 days, caused the deaths of thousands of non-combatants, both within and without the borders of the foreign-controlled areas, and cost millions of dollars.

November 13

Following the capture of the Chinese Customs godown on the Nantao Bund yesterday and the hoisting of the Rising Sun flag, work continued on the "boom" across the river and at 9.30 a.m. a Japanese destroyer passed through to open the waterway for the first time in three months.

Japanese claimed the capture of Kiating, strategic village on the Shanghai-Wusih highway this morning. Also that the Japanese were launching a fierce offensive along the entire Liuho-Lotien front in an attempt to break through the Chinese lines. Heavy fighting was also reported along the Shanghai-Hangchow Railway, northwest of Chapoo with Fengchin, a small village along the railway line, the objective of the Chinese forces.

In the north reports trickling through, claim that the Japanese are advancing along the Peiping-Hankow Railway with Taming as their objective, a village occupied by the troops of General Sung Cheh-yuan, formerly chairman of the Hopei-Chahar Political Council.

At Brussels, Italian objection prevented the adoption of the "draft declaration" regretting Japan's refusal to cooperate with Nine-Power Conference meeting. However, the delegates decided to refer the draft to their respective governments. The draft is still open to amendment before it is voted on November 15.

On the Tatung-Puchow Railway, Japanese troops advancing towards the south were meeting with heavy resistance from the Chinese forces while remnant Chinese troops are reported to be harassing the Japanese around Taiyuan.

November 14

Chinese troops along the Shanghai-Hangchow Railway west of Sungkiang, according to Chinese reports, are strengthening their positions along the Pinghu-Fengchin sector where they have received reinforcements. As the Japanese have also been rushing up reinforcements into this area it is quite possible that a major clash will take place in this sector.

In the air the Japanese had a very active day raiding several cities and towns along the Shanghai-Nanking and Shanghai-Hangchow-Ningpo Railways. Soochow came in for attention of the raiders where several "eggs" were laid over a wide area. Heavy damage was also done to the Kashing railway station in a raid by six planes.

According to a statement made by a Japanese embassy official today, the "Jacquinot Zone" in Nantao has now come under the jurisdiction of the Japanese since their troops have occupied the entire Nantao area. It was further stated, that as the Japanese have not the facilities available for taking over the administration of the "Zone" and caring for the thousands of refugees concentrated there, they will continue to allow the International Red Cross to carry on its work there so long conditions agreed upon are fulfilled.

In the North, telegraphic reports show that heavy fighting has broken out in southern Hopei with the Chinese forces taking the offensive in an attempt to break through the Japanese line of communications along the Peiping-Hankow Railway. While this was going on, Japanese forces were staging an offensive into Shantung province along a wide area on both sides of the Tientsin-Pukow Railway.

November 15

On information received from Chinese sources today, it was stated that the Chinese main forces have withdrawn from the local area into their so-called second line of national defense which runs from Fushan on the Yangtze bank to Chapoo on Hangchow Bay via Changshu and Soochow and along the Soochow-Kashing Railway to an area east of Pinghu.

While heavy fighting was going on in the Chapoo-Kashing sector, a continuous stream of Japanese troops and supplies were observed moving southward over Chungshan Road in the western area. Japanese sources claim that owing to the relentless drive of their forces, it is quite possible that the Chinese would be unable to stem the advancing Japanese and that the road to Soochow would be entirely open.

Detonations were heard today throughout the city at frequent intervals from exploding ammunition and mines in the Nantao area as the huge conflagrations there burnt over wide areas of territory previously occupied by the Chinese forces. In the "Jacquinot Zone" food supplies were being rushed in to feed the thousands of refugees congregated there.

This morning members of the Japanese Naval forces seized 12 Customs cruisers which were tied up off the French Bund, and ordered all the foreign and Chinese officers as well as the crew ashore.

Chinese troops who had withdrawn from Kiating and Taichong during the past few days were today clashing with advancing Japanese forces along the banks of the Tsinyangkiang river near Henli, while Japanese planes heavily bombed Soochow and Quinsan as well as sections along the Soochow-Kashing Railway.

In Hongkew today, Sikh constables were directing traffic south of Range Road while Japanese constables were policing the area north of the road.

As yet the Settlement police have not been allowed to function in the Wayside and Yangtzepoo areas, and it is quite unlikely that they will for a considerable length of time owing to the continual troops movements in this district.

In the north, Japanese reports claim that Taming, in south Hopei, collapsed after a fierce battle with stiff resistance being offered by the 29th Chinese Army under command of General Sung Cheh-Yuan. Tsinan, capital of Shantung province, received intensive bombing raids from Japanese planes throughout the day. Following these raids it was reported that General Han Fu-chu has decided to move the capital to Ninyang, a village 35 miles southeast of Tainan.

The Nine Power Conference, being held at Brussels, today added its official condemnation of Japan as an aggressor in China by adopting last Saturday's declaration censuring Japan for violation of the Nine Power Treaty.

November 16

Major hostilities were under way today on the Chinese second line of defense from Fushan to Chapoo when advancing Japanese forces met up with the main Chinese body. Chinese forces were reported to be making a fierce counter-offensive against the Japanese in the Kashing and Kashan area, while at the same time the Japanese were putting on a concentrated "push" on Pinghu. Fighting has also broken out within 20 miles of Soochow, but it is reported that the Chinese forces are retiring to their lines at Soochow. Shelling of the Fushan and Langshan forts on the north and south banks close to the "boom" by Japanese men-of-war along the Yangtze was well under way today, with intermittent replies being made from the Chinese batteries.

From Nanking comes the report that the Chinese troops will not attempt to hold the line running from Fushan to Soochow, but that they will drop back to the Kiangyin-Wusih line.

It was announced today, that following negotiations between the parties concerned, the present supervisory committee will be responsible for the care of the thousands of refugees at present within the Nantao Safety area.

Japanese residents were allowed today to return to their homes on Dixwell Road, Darroch Road, North Szechuen Road, Scott Road and Hsiangteh Road owing to the quietness of the district since the Chinese withdrawal from the Shanghai area. Returning residents were surprised at the amount of damage done. In the Hungjao area no admittance could be gained without a special permit from the Japanese military authorities.

From Nanking comes the report that all officials have been ordered to be prepared to evacuate the city within a period of three days. While in Shanghai rumors were current that the Japanese were about to set up a "Japanese-fostered" government with jurisdiction over the areas in the Yangtze delta and under Japanese military occupation.

In the north, Japanese troops are reported to be advancing along all fronts and that they are within four miles of the Yellow River bridge on the Tientsin-Pukow Railway line. Chinese troops who had already crossed the Yellow River were today consolidating their positions on the south bank in preparation for an anticipated attempt by the Japanese forces to cross the river.

A telegraphic report from London today states that Japan recently delivered to France, a virtual ultimatum, to the effect that she must bar from shipment through Indo-China supplies and munitions destined for China according to highly reliable sources. Immediate seizure of Hainan Island was threatened by Japan it is understood unless war materials being shipped through this route were stopped immediately.

November 17

Heavy fighting between Chinese and Japanese forces was reported under way this morning, near Pingwan and Wongkiangchin, on the southern end of the Soochow-Kashing Railway. The Chinese forces in this area are under the direction of General Chang Fah-kwei and are putting up fierce resistance in an attempt to keep the Japanese forces from reaching Kashing. The Japanese, however, are marching on Kashing from Kashan which has already fallen into the hands of the Japanese.

From Nanking comes the report that the Chinese have consolidated their positions along the Shanghai-Nanking Railway with the arrival of fresh troops and that they are now holding a line extending from Hupukow, on the Yangtze to Chapoo, via Changshu, Tsinpu, Kashing and Pinghu.

Japanese sources claim today that over 91,000 Chinese soldiers were left behind on the battlefields in and around Shanghai and also estimated the total Chinese casualties as 300,000 between August 13 and November 16. War booty included 14,200 rifles, 2,300 machineguns and 2,273,000 cartridges.

Heavy fighting was going on this morning near Wukiang as the Japanese launched repeated attacks along the Soochow-Kashing Railway line, 15 miles south of Soochow. During the course of the day the Japanese forces captured Pingwang to gain a foothold on the southern banks of Taihu Lake.

In the north, no attempt as yet has been made by the Japanese forces to cross the Yellow River along the Tientsin Pukow Railway. In Shansi, however, Japanese columns are pushing southward from Taiyuanfu towards Lingfeng. From Tsingtao comes the news that another tense situation prevails owing to the extension of hostilities into northern Shantung.

November 18

Steam launches and rafts were being mobilized today by the Japanese military and naval forces in

preparation for the movement of troops in the Taihu Lake area in an attempt to land forces on the west bank of the lake along the Nanking-Hangchow highway. Chinese military commanders anticipating just such a move claim to have stationed around the lake enough troops to make the Japanese attempt at landing along the west bank a difficult one. Routine shelling of the Fushan district by the Japanese was continued today with no attempt at landing being made.

According to Japanese reports but denied by the Chinese, Kashing was occupied by the Japanese forces today after heavy fighting. In the Chapoo-Pingwang area severe fighting was going on with the Japanese forces slowly pushing forward.

News from the north gained headlines in the Shanghai newspapers today when it was learned that the Chinese were mustering their forces south of Taiyuanfu in preparation for a major battle with the Japanese forces who are pushing southward. As yet the Japanese have made no attempt to cross the Yellow River and it has been rumored that the Japanese push southward in this area has been halted to give General Han Fu-chu, governor of the province, an opportunity to surrender his province to the Japanese military.

In Paris, today, the French Foreign Office denied reports that Japan had delivered an ultimatum to France to cease the dispatch of arms to China through Indo-China.

In Moscow, Marshal Bluecher, commander of the Army stationed at Khabarovsk, announced in a manifesto that "The Soviet Far Eastern Army and Pacific Fleet will not allow a Fascist bloc to violate a single inch of the Soviet border."

November 19

Japanese reports today claim that "the Changshu-Fushan 'Hindenberg Line' is no more." Further, that Changshu was occupied at dawn today by Japanese forces, following the capture of Macheng, between Changshu and Soochow.

Following up previous gains in the Soochow area, it is now reported that the Japanese attacking forces are within three miles of Soochow. The complete occupation of Kashing was also confirmed this morning.

Tsinan, capital of Shantung province, was the scene of a general exodus of the populace today following fires in the downtown area two days ago when "agents" responsible for the deed were fired on by members of the local garrison who killed many of them. The positions of the contending forces along the Yellow river remain the same with both forces consolidating their positions.

Shanghai itself came into the news today when members of the municipal police force shot dead three gunmen in a battle at the Oriental Hotel, 690 Nanking Road. After the tide of battle had quieted down, members of the police found five pistols and three hand grenades of the type used by Chinese soldiers in the Shanghai area.

More Americans deserted Nanking today in the general evacuation of the city. However, several thousand troops were noticed arriving into the city from Kwangsi, Kwangtung and Szechuen with full field equipment supposedly to be used in strengthening the Kiangyin-Wusih line.

November 20

Japanese forces today completely occupied Soochow, the "Venice of Asia" after putting the remaining defenders to flight, it was announced today by the Japanese. According to usually reliable Chinese sources, Chinese today admitted the smashing of their "Hindenberg Line" by the savage onslaughts of the Japanese forces and that practically all strategic points along the line had been lost outside of Fushan which they claim still remains in their hands.

In an official statement issued by the *Kuofu* this morning, Chungking, in Szechuen province, became the capital of China. In naming Chungking the capital of China as from today, government officials announced that China is not abandoning Nanking or the war of resistance against Japan.

In the north, Chinese troops were reported to be pressing northward after crossing the Yellow River at several places and harassing the Japanese lines. At Tsingtao, China's holiday resort, foreign consuls were reported to have advised their nationals to make preparations for the evacuation of the city, following the discontinuance of commerical and passenger traffic service over the Kiaotsi railway.

November 21

Chinese troops retreating from Soochow are reported to be dropping back northwards toward Wusih, to fall into prepared lines running from Wusih to Kiangyin on the banks of the Yangtze river. It is estimated that the Chinese have some 70,000 troops in this area. It has also been reliably reported that the Fushan Forts are also in the hands of the Japanese.

Following the loss of Soochow, Chinese military leaders are now rushing through with plans for the defense of Nanking. Another "boom" is reported to have already been laid across the Yangtze between Chinkiang and Kiangyin with the Chinese planning a new defense line east of Nanking with Chinkiang as its northern base.

Refugees continue to pour out of all Nanking gates, to leave their homes for safer areas further inland.

Two Japanese warships were reported today as having occupied Weichow Island, to tighten its blockade of the China Coast. It was reported that over 200 naval ratings made a landing in small motor launches followed by the immediate hoisting of the Rising Sun flag.

On the Chinese right flank, heavy fighting was under way at three different points. Haiyen was the scene of a severe clash when Japanese troops advancing along the Hangchow highway westward ran into the Chinese defensive positions. The Shanghai-Hangchow Railway sector, west of Kashing, also received the attention of the Japanese forces while another severe engagement took place at Kutsun.

November 22

According to Chinese sources, Japanese batteries were heavily shelling the Kiangyin forts today, presumably to effect a landing in the area. Army bombers were also used during the course of the day to drop shell after shell into the fortified area. Japanese infantry troops landed at Kiangyin also took part in the attack on the forts today.

Five Japanese transports discharged several hundreds of troops and supplies in the Yangtzepoo area today while two other took away about 1,500 wounded soldiers.

Although the weather today is not conducive for aerial work, Japanese bombers again raided Wusih, the city proper receiving the brunt of yesterday's air activities. Two air raid alarms were sounded in Nanking but no planes appeared.

Reports from the north show the Japanese preparing to cross the Yellow River. This move, without the semblance of a doubt, means that General Han Fu-chu intends throwing his forces into the general fray.

November 23

In a report emanating from London, it is stated on the highest authority that Great Britain will immediately undertake to initiate diplomatic discussions with the United States and other powers interested in the International Settlement of Shanghai, should the Japanese insist on taking over the administration of the foreign concessions. From Washington it is learned that the United States will vigorously protest any seizure of rights that may infringe on certain treaty rights in the International Settlement.

Although it was reported in the press yesterday that the Japanese had occupied Wusih, at today's Japanese press conference the spokesman denied the report and stated the Japanese forces were still about eight miles from the city.

Sanguinary fighting was taking place today east of the Hangchow-Nanking highway, between Wushing and Changshing, which proves that the Japanese have effected a landing on the south and west shores of Taihu Lake. On the Kiangyin-Wusih front, reports show the Japanese pushing forward vigorously in an attempt to break through the Chinese lines.

In the north, Chinese reinforcements were being rushed into north of Shansi while thousands of Japanese troops are concentrating at Ling-shih, which if true would bring the two forces together in major combat shortly along the Tungpu railway.

According to reports from Japanese Naval fliers, following raids over Nanking yesterday, two Soviet-built pursuit planes were used by the Chinese in combat over the city, one being shot down during a dog fight. Chinese deny the fact that any Soviet planes are being used.

November 24

Eight Japanese bombers visited Nanking today for the first time since last September. The planes flying at a very high altitude dropped eight bombs in the heart of the city. Other Japanese raids were carried out over Changsha, Loyang and Canton.

Huchow fell into Japanese hands today after a severe clash with the Chinese defenders putting up stiff resistance.

On the Kiangyin-Wusih front, Chinese were rushing reinforcements to their lines in an attempt to ward off the Japanese who are within three miles of Wusih.

In the north, according to Japanese reports, all is quiet, but Chinese reports credit the Japanese with an artillery bombardment of Tsinan from the north shores of the Yellow River. Chinese sources also state that several warships have turned up in Tsingtao waters, and that they are ready for any attempted Japanese landing of troops.

Mr. Gerald Samson, British writer, according to a press report, arrived in Tientsin today after being forcibly expelled from Manchukuo. Action by the police in Manchukuo followed the publication of a sensational story in the Harbin Nichi Nichi branding Mr. Samson as a British spy.

November 25

Japanese planes were active over a wide area today. Heavy damage was done to both the Canton-Kowloon and Canton-Hankow lines by aerial bombs with both lines being forced to discontinue their services today. A railway bridge was blown up on the Canton-Kowloon line. Twelve bombs were dropped at Chungtien Station on the Canton-Hankow line with some scoring direct hits on the railway tracks. It is expected that repairs will be completed within the next few days and the regular service resumed. In Honan, Hsinhsiang was heavily bombed. Planes also raided and bombed the Chinese position throughout the day in the Wushing-Changshing area. Ihing also came in for its share of bombing.

According to Japanese reports, Wusih, prosperous city on the shores of Taihu lake, fell before the Japanese this morning. The troops were reported to have continued on through the city in pursuit of the retreating Chinese forces.

The Kiangyin Forts on the Yangtze river are still being held by Chinese, while on the Hangchow Bay front, Japanese infantrymen are pushing forward onto Haiyen.

At 12.30 this afternoon, several Japanese planes raided the Canton-Kowloon Railway line with bomb after bomb being dropped on the Shihlung station.

According to reports circulating in Shanghai, Dr. T. V. Soong, chairman of the Board of Directors of the Bank of China and member of the standing committee of the National Economic Council has left Shanghai for an unknown destination.

Nanking was raided again this afternoon when three planes made an appearance over the city to drop six bombs before being driven off by heavy anti-aircraft fire from Chinese batteries. During the same raid several bombs were also dropped onto the air field outside the city.

November 26

According to a Shanghai United News report, General Iwane Matsui, Commander-in-chief of the Japanese Expeditionary Forces in Shanghai is quoted as saying "Unless the Nanking Government reconsiders its attitude and ceases its resistance, Japanese troops will continue their advance to Nanking, Hankow and even Chungking, China's new capital, and although he did not wish to harass innocent Chinese people and kill more soldiers, this decisive campaign will be carried out, if necessary, to bring Generalissimo Chiang Kai-shek to terms."

Japanese forces were driving forward today in a westerly direction with the final objective Nanking, the deserted former capital of China. Following the capture of Changshing Japanese infantrymen continued their push northwestwards close on the heels of the Chinese troops, according to Japanese reports. Chinese reports, however, deny the fall of Wusih and still claim to be holding out along the entire Wusih-Kiangyin line.

It was announced today that the Japanese authorities intended to take over the various Chinese government communication offices in Shanghai, but without any date being specified as to when the "taking over" would take place.

In the north, Chinese claim the recapture of Liocheng and Tangyi in Shantung, north of the Yellow River, while on the Tientsin-Pukow Railway, the Chinese right flank crossed the river to put a check on the Japanese frontal attack along this line. Japanese planes were also reported to have bombed many towns north of Tsinan, including Lincheng.

Chinese reports claim that mobile units are active between Soochow and Quinsan and are launching attacks on Japanese positions in this area.

November 27

Canton today once again came under bombing activities from Japanese planes off their air-craft carrier anchored near the Kwangtung coast. Both the Canton-Hankow and Canton-Kowloon lines received the attention of the raiders with no serious damage being reported. Continuing further afield, Japanese raids were also made on Chinkiang and Loyang.

From Japan comes the report that...."Japan may find it necessary to resort to force as regards the Shanghai International Settlement issue," declared the prime minister, Prince Konoye, in an interview with Japanese pressmen.

Although Japanese claim to have captured Wusih and Chanshing, Chinese despatches received from Hangchow, claim that fighting is still raging around these cities and that they are definitely being held by Chinese forces. Chinese also claim that the Japanese losses are exceedingly heavy in the Taihu lake area. Japanese reports claim that their troops. following the capture of Changshing, are swiftly moving westward towards the Anhwei border and Kwangteh, close on the heels of the retreating Chinese forces.

From the north comes reports that the situation has changed but slightly, with very little action taking place on the different fronts. Japanese state that very little activity would take place in the northern areas until after the fall of Nanking, when doubtless large scale operations would most likely be under way once again.

Reports circulating in Tokyo today claim that the new Soviet Ambassador to China, M. Unganeto Orelsky, was leaving for China with 50 Soviet planes, 10 Russian fliers and large quantities of munitions, while from Washington comes the report that Mr. Clarence Gauss, American Consul General in Shanghai, was expected to handle any situation arising from Japan's taking over the Chinese communications in the International Settlement and French Concession.

November 28

Kiangyin today still remains in Chinese hands notwithstanding the terrific shelling from land and naval batteries as well as from the air and land forces. Chinese forces in this area are claimed to be putting up stubborn resistance. The boom across the Yangtze still remains intact with the Japanese forces concentrating their artillery fire on both sides of the river above the boom. Heavy fighting still continues around Wushing. Japanese forces claim to have crossed the Ahwei border and are now marching on Kwangteh. In the Taihu lake area, the Japanese advance has been considerably slowed down although they have definitely secured a strong foothold on the west bank of the lake at Kapu.

In the north, according to Chinese reports, Chinese mobile units made a surprise attack on Japanese positions north of the Yellow River and recaptured the village of Putai. Fighting on the Tientsin-Pukow Railway sector was featured by an artillery duel across the river with Japanese shells landing in Sinchuang, causing minor damage, while Linfeng, provisional capital of Shansi province, was visited by Japanese raiders who carried out bombing activities over the city.

November 29

Chinese forces withdrew from the fortified area at Kiangyin, after suffering terrific bombardment from Japanese artillery, while at Wusih, Chinese sources claim that their troops have consolidated their posi-

tions following their withdrawal from Wusih at Shihtangwan, a village west of Wusih on the Shanghai-Nanking Railway line. In the area to the west of Taihu Lake, Chinese reports claim that the situation at Kwangteh is critical although excellent defense works have been erected around the village and outlying districts. Along the western side of Taihu Lake Japanese forces are continuing their push onto Ihing, with troops from the Taihu Lake area already in the suburbs of the city, following severe fighting in which the Chinese staged several counter-attacks but to no avail. Japanese bombers were active throughout the day, bombing the Chinese lines as well as their lines of communications.

Following a lull in military operations in the north, Japanese units were once again active on the Shantung front, Kwantaohsien being occupied by a Japanese advance guard. In the air, Linfen, a station on the Tatung-Puchow Railway line was bombed.

In Tokyo today, the Nichi Nichi gave great prominence to a story from its correspondent in Paris that Dr. Wellington Koo, Chinese ambassador to France and Chief Chinese delegate to the Brussels Conference, was negotiating with foreign powers for a huge loan for munitions to the extent of £100,000,000 with Dr. Koo being quoted as saying "that unless he received the loan, all rights and interests of foreign powers in China would be wiped out."

Japanese military authorities today visited the Chinese Press Censorship offices situated in the Continental Emporium building and after their visit the following notice was hung outside the door: "Shanghai News Censorship Office." The Chinese Censorship office suspended its operations on November 23.

Knowing that Wuhu, the screen to Nanking, is the aim of the Japanese forces westward, Chinese troops are consolidating their positions further around Kwangteh, the key city in line of the Japanese march to Wuhu.

November 30

The Japanese spokesman at the daily press conference today announced that Hongkew would be opened to former residents on December 15. However, only foreigners and their Chinese servants will be allowed to enter the area, after securing the necessary permits, with the hours of entering and leaving fixed at 5 a.m. and 10.00 p.m. respectively. The districts north of Range Road and the extra-settlement roads will still remain closed.

At 1.05 p.m. today, Japanese soldiers aboard a military launch, off the French Bund, boarded two Italian tugs, the Romolo and Lido of the China Trade Development Navigation Company, hauled down their flags and moved them to a position down river.

In Nanking the great exodus of the civilian population still continues with thousands of natives streaming out of the city in rickshas, carts or afoot.

From Hongkong comes the report that Dr. T. V. Soong is now in the Colony port and intends resting there for some time.

In the north, Japanese sources claim that peace is returning and that plans are under way for the further development of the area which is now under Japanese domination. Leading financiers in the region, it is said, are now seeking the establishment of a powerful banking institution capable of financing the development of North China's industries and maintaining the stability of the currency.

Desultory fighting, according to reports from the areas concerned, show fighting still being carried on in Shansi as well as along the Tientsin-Pukow railway line.

A Japanese column, advancing from Wushing over the Nanking-Hangchow highway, is reported to be 20 miles north of Hangchow. Chinese sources admitted today the fall of Ihing and that troops stationed on the Shanghai-Nanking Railway are withdrawing from the area westward.

In a report, emanating from Hankow, a Chinese government spokesman is quoted as stating "Nanking will defend itself to the last breath and the last shot." He claimed also that the Chinese positions near Nanking have been further strengthened with strong Chinese troop concentrations and although the government had left the capital, the city would not be abandoned.

Japanese planes were active throughout the day by bombing Chinese troop concentrations as well as their lines of communications. The cities of Tanyang, Kintan and Liyang were also bombed.

In their advance on Nanking, the Japanese are using three main routes, one column following the Shanghai-Nanking Railway line, the second the Nanking-Hangchow highway and the third along the Changshing-Kwangteh highway towards Wuhu and thence on to Nanking.

December 1

The warfront in the north today was fairly quiet except for surprise attacks by Chinese units on isolated Japanese garrisons. A wholesale reorganization of the Shansi and Suiyuan provincial armies under General Yen Hsi-shan is reported to have been completed in preparation for a general counter-offensive on the Japanese forces in Shansi.

The Nantao boom continues to have the attention of the Japanese today. A mine explosion on the Pootung side of the river started fires to some 10 to 15 junks. Isolated fires in the Nantao area were still burning today.

The two Italian launches seized by the Japanese yesterday were returned to their owners today after negotiations between the Japanese and Italian consular officials.

Reports received here from Tokyo claim that Italian aircrafts may be purchased by "Manchukuo" to balance the trade between the two nations. It is also reported that following the recognition of the new State, on Monday, by Italy, the two governments have agreed to exchange ministers.

Refugees from the outlying districts around Shanghai today claim that isolated Chinese mobile units are harassing the rear of the Japanese lines from western Shanghai to Quinsan.

Following the fall of Wusih, Chinese reports state that their new line for the defense of Nanking has been established from Chinkiang, on the Yangtze, to Tangyang and thence to Kintan.

Sanguinary fighting took place today in the Chapoo, Kwangteh and Kiangyin areas with the Japanese claiming steady advances.

December 2

To the surprise of the entire Shanghai populace, Japanese authorities announced that they intend to parade through the International Settlement tomorrow morning with some 6,000 men taking part, all being regular army troops of the Nipponese forces. The parade is to commence from the Toyoda Cotton Mill in western Shanghai.

In a report from London, it is stated that the British Government will not permit the Japanese to take over the International Settlement in Shanghai, and according to Mr. Anthony Eden, the Foreign Secretary, Great Britain does not recognize the right of any Settlement power to act unilaterally for the solution of problems arising in the administration of the International Settlement.

From Tokyo comes the report that the Japanese Government maintains that the Chinese Maritime Customs in Shanghai is a Chinese Government organ and therefore, the question of the Japanese taking over the Customs should be solved through direct negotiations between China and Japan, and that Japan will adhere to the principle of rejecting interference from any third power.

According to Japanese reports, Chinese planes raided Shanghai this morning after weeks of quiet, adding that a small bomb was dropped on the former mooring place of the Idzumo, opposite the Japanese Consulate General, also that other bombs had been dropped at Woosung. Japanese further claim that their forces are making steady headway towards Nanking, the former seat of the Government of China, from the newly captured towns of Kiangyin, Changchow and Ihing. At Kiangyin, it was disclosed that Chinese troops still hold a section of the fortified area.

From Nanking come reports, confirming previous statements, that the former capital city will be defended to the last. New troops are daily being rushed into the area with new fortifications being erected within and without the city.

In the north today, real action was once again in progress with heavy fighting going on between the belligerents at Chihsien, some 55 miles south of Taiyuan, the shell torn former capital of Shansi province.

December 3

As mentioned yesterday, and on scheduled time, Japanese troops entered the International Settlement shortly after 11:00 a.m. to commence their "victory parade" through the heart of the city. The police forces of both the International Settlement and French Concession were taxed to their utmost in making hurried preparations for keeping order.

Before the parade took place it is understood that the Shanghai Consular Body had expressed their disapproval of the project. But the parade went on just the same to the great surprise of all nationals of both the Settlement and Concession.

After entering the western area, the troops proceeded along their line of march through Nanking Road. At 12:46 p.m., however, an "incident" that everyone in Shanghai were so sure would take place, materialized when a bomb was hurled into the marching ranks of infantrymen as they were passing the Sun Sun Co.'s Department Store. The bomb was thrown from Kwangse Road, south of Nanking Road, by a Chinese civilian. He was, however, shot by a Chinese Police Constable.

Before the Japanese had entered Nanking Road from Yu Ya Ching Road, all Chinese were cleared off Nanking Road.

Following the explosion, Japanese infantrymen scattered in all directions, some down side streets and others hugging the sides of Nanking Road.

During the melee that took place it was found that three Japanese soldiers had been wounded as well as a member of the Shanghai Municipal Police.

Within twenty minutes, however, the parade was resumed after the Japanese authorities had left behind a cordon around the area, which remained in control of their military for seven hours until direct negotiations with the police over the investigation had proved satisfactory to the Japanese.

At the Japanese press conference this evening the Japanese spokesman stated that "the Japanese authorities have no intention of taking undue advantage of today's incident on Nanking Road, but they do not believe that the Shanghai Municipal Council will shirk its responsibility for the occurrence though the Council cannot be held responsible until a full investigation establishes the facts."

The Canton-Kowloon Railway in Kwangtung as well as Nanking were raided today. At Nanking, two raids were carried out and although bombs were dropped outside the city, the damage, if any, is not known. In the raid on the Canton-Kowloon Railway, the station of Shihlung was said to have been hit by six bombs, while the Chinese claimed to have brought down one of the raiders.

On the southern front, north of Shanghai, the Japanese were making steady progress towards Nanking, with the Chinese withdrawing along all their northern lines towards Nanking, where they are expected to make a final stand, as large troop concentrations have been noticed in parts of Kiangsu, Chekiang and Anhwei provinces.

December 4

Shortly after 10:00 this morning, five Japanese military trucks proceeded along Shanghai's Bund and on arriving at the boundary of the French Concession were stopped by armed police of the Concession as well as by armoured cars, spread across the street on the Concession side. After discussion held between the French and Japanese officials, the trucks, which were on their way to Nantao with supplies, were allowed to pass through the Concession after a delay of 30 minutes with armed French escorts aboard each.

With the Japanese forces only 35 miles from Nanking and close to Kuying, military forces in Nanking are rushing their defense works in the deserted capital today. Neutral observers claim that the Chinese have put into the lines in and around Nanking over 300,000 men, which would mean that the Nipponese will, under the circumstances, pay dearly in the eventual attack on Nanking which is now approaching a climax.

Aerial activities of the Japanese bombers stretched over a wide area today, as besides harassing the retreating Chinese troops towards Nanking, bombing operations were also carried out over the Nanking Airdrome and at Kuying, Ningkuo, Wuhu and Suencheng where Chinese troops concentrations had been observed.

December 5

Following the bombing "incident" on Nanking Road, December 3, the Japanese Commander-in-Chief, General Iwane Matsui of the Japanese Expeditionary Forces in Shanghai has presented to the Shanghai Municipal Council the following four demands according to reports published in the Japanese Press today.

1. The Japanese troops, when necessary, shall be allowed to pass through the International Settlement any time without advance notice to the Council;
2. The Council shall hereafter take energetic steps to prevent a recurrence of such unfortunate incidents;
3. In the event of a recurrence of similar incidents, the Japanese Army will take independent and effective measures;
4. To help the Council in maintaining peace and order in the International Settlement, the Japanese Army, when it considers necessary, may take independent steps to investigate, examine suspects and other steps inside the Settlement.

It is the consensus of opinion among observers that the acceptance of the Japanese demands would place the International Settlement and all residents not enjoying extraterritorial rights under their full control.

From America comes the news that the United States are already taking measures to make the Hawaiian Islands the most fortified zone in the Pacific Ocean, with the intention of rendering it practicallly impregnable from land, sea and air.

Nanking received attention today as it was reported that the Japanese advance units are within twenty miles of the city. Civil authority is practically non-existent but peace and order are kept in the capital through the military commander of the area. The city itself is practically deserted as nearly the entire populace has evacuated the city for safer places farther up the Yangtze. Streets that two weeks ago were teeming with people and full of activity are now deserted with very few civilians in the area outside of the refugee zone.

With Chinese forces preparing to defend the Capital City and with the Japanese forces but twenty miles away, a major battle for the city will be in the offing very shortly it is thought by foreign observers.

Along the front, Japanese forces were making steady progress today toward the city with the detachment along the Hangchow-Nanking highway making the greatest progress, being the closest to the city. Along the Yangtze, Chinese batteries on the north shore were hampering the Japanese advance towards Chinkiang. Along the Kwangteh front Chinese troops were putting up stubborn resistance against the advancing Japanese in this sector, with the hope of staving off the eventual capture of Wuhu which is thought would be attacked simultaneously with Nanking.

The military situation on the North China front is fairly quiet although several small skirmishes have been reported in the southern part of Hopei province between Japanese regulars and Chinese "guerilla" forces.

Another "incident" took place today when Japanese planes bombed two British river vessels at Wuhu while carrying out bombing activities over the area. Investigations into the bombings are now being made by the British authorities.

December 6

This morning at 6:00, Japanese military and consular policemen raided the Great Eastern Hotel on Nanking Road and took away four of the inmates of the hotel to Hongkew for questioning. They were released one hour later. Following this raid, late this afternoon, members of the Shanghai Municipal Council were holding informal discussions in order to decide what course of action to take in dealing with this "incident."

The total deaths from the Japanese bombings at Wuhu yesterday have reached 42 according to reports received, while an additional 150 casualties were treated by the Wuhu General Hospital, operations being performed on 33. Investigations on the spot by British authorities is still continuing and although no official protests as yet have been made, it seems certain that a strong course of action will be taken.

In a report emanating from Tokyo, it is stated that Japanese naval planes have bombed or shot

down no less than 50 Chinese planes as well as demolished 14 hangars and military barracks during the past two weeks in raids over Chowkiachow, Loyang, Sian and Lanchow.

Japanese motorized tanks and infantry units were claimed to be within sight of Nanking with further advance being made by the entire Japanese forces who are marching in two columns onto the city. The other column is making fast headway towards Wuhu where her troops have engaged the Chinese in clashes at Suencheng. Japanese air raids were carried out today over Chinese troops concentrations at Wuhu, Nanking and Ningkuo, while in south China, the Canton-Hankow railway was raided this morning. Japanese military observers in Tokyo today claimed that Nanking would fall into Japanese hands within the next few days, or by December 15 at the latest. After breaking the boom at Kiangyin, Japanese destroyers have advanced beyond it and are now sweeping the mine-fields just above that area.

December 7

According to Chinese reports received in Shanghai this morning, General Chiang Kai-shek's reply to the peace overtures made recently by Dr. Oskar Trautmann, the German Ambassador at Nanking, were short and determined. The General is quoted to have told the German envoy that his duties were to attend to the war. According to the same sources the terms presented to General Chiang were as follows:

1. That China joins the Anti-Comintern Agreement.
2. That China recognizes "Manchukuo."
3. That China revise her customs tariff.
4. That a Japanese Concession be established in Shanghai.
5. That the Kuomintang be reorganized.

The Japanese spokesman at this evening's press conference stated that the Japanese advance in all sectors were steady and that their lines ran from Tanshang to Ningkuo, passing through a point west of Lishui and making an arch westward in going from north to south.

Japanese air raids today were carried out over Wuhu and Nanking where Chinese convoys and troops concentrations were bombed, and planes were also used for observation purposes around the Nanking area.

With detachments of Japanese troops practically outside the gates of Nanking today, it is believed that large scale hostilities will open in a day or two after the Japanese have brought more troops as well as supplies into the area.

In Nanking itself there is tension everywhere, with residents still within the city waiting calmly and patiently for the inevitable to come. Several fires were observed from the vicinity of the walls.

As there are still many small vessels and junks moored on the Yangtse and close to the city, it is thought quite probable that in case the Chinese troops now holding the former capital withdraw, they will do so by crossing the river to Pukow.

From Tientsin, confirmed by Japanese reports, Chinese forces have recaptured Pingyao, in Shansi. Also that the Chinese are preparing another line along the Yellow River from Tungkuan on the Tientsin-Pukow Railway to a point 60 miles inside the Shantung border.

Soviet Russia came into the picture today, when in a report from London it is stated that Russia has informed Great Britain and France that she has no intention of acting against Japan unless other powers give her full support.

December 8

According to a *Domei* report today, Japanese forces were urging General Tang Sheng-chi, Nanking Garrison Commander, to surrender with his men. Further, that Japanese authorities will communicate with consular officials of the various countries still in the former capital to urge their nationals to evacuate immediately.

Japanese troops under cover of heavy shelling and bombing landed on the north bank of the Yangtse this morning at Tsingkiang, north of Kiangyin.

At Nanking, Chinese troops together with supplies were pouring into the city all morning through the east gate, while reports claim that Japanese troops have already mounted guns on Purple Mountain which overlooks the city.

According to a foreign eye-witness today, there were over 40 transports off Woosung although only three men-of-war were seen at the mouth of the Yangtse.

The Second Brigade, U.S. Marines, paraded at the Race Course this morning and was reviewed by Brigadier-General Beaumont, Commander of the brigade, composed of the 4th and 6th Regiments.

Fighting occurred on the outskirts of Nanking today with the Chinese falling back towards the city.

In the north, Chinese mobile units were very active in Shansi province and according to Chinese reports several small villages and cities have been recaptured.

December 9

For the first time in weeks, anti-aircraft fire was heard in Shanghai when the Idzumo opened up with her guns just before 6:00 this evening, although no drone of planes were heard. At 3:00 this afternoon, however, two planes of unknown nationality were seen high above Shanghai.

Nanking is now under seige by Japanese forces and according to Japanese reports the city's fate is sealed. Fighting still continues outside the city walls on a small scale with guerilla tactics being used by Chinese troops in the rear of the Japanese lines.

Advancing Japanese troops today are within 10 miles of Wuhu after capturing Yangtsun, following the fall of Ningkuo.

Owing to rumors being current in Shanghai that the four government banks here were going to close their doors, a spokesman of the Central Bank discounted the rumors as untrue and further added that he had received instructions from Dr. Kung, Minister of Finance, that these banks are to continue functioning here for the sole purpose of maintaining the local money market for the benefit and interest of all concerned.

The Imperial Japanese Forces this morning issued a statement through consular and diplomatic channels warning foreign nationals of the danger to their interests and disclaiming all responsibility for ships and vehicle of Third Powers which are now in the zone of hostilities in the Yangtse Valley.

Reports dribbling through to Shanghai show that the Japanese made their first assault on the Nanking city gates today, with shell-fire blasting one of the gates. Tanks were in readiness to rush through, but according to Chinese reports, the first large scale attack on the city was repulsed after a three-hour battle. During the height of the battle, scores of Japanese planes bombed the city's defense works. Following the Japanese withdrawal, Chinese claimed to have repaired the blasted gate which had suffered several large-size holes.

In the north, all was quiet outside of artillery duels along the Yellow River between the opposing factions in the Tientsin-Pukow Railway area.

December 10

Heavy fighting is proceeding at Nanking today with the Japanese shelling the city's defense works unmercifully. Several planes were once again used in the fray by the Japanese with thousands of pounds of high explosives being dropped into the heart of the city.

During the fighting today Japanese troops gained a foothold around the Kwanghwa Gate, but were met with several fierce counter-attacks throughout the afternoon and evening, despite which they desperately held onto their positions. Stubborn resistance is also being met from the Chinese troops defending the city.

In an election address at Moscow today, Viacheslav Molotov, chairman of the people's Commissars of the U.S.S.R., stated that: Soviet Russia has kept out of War for 16 years, but she is now ready to meet any attacker." "Soviet Russia," he stated further, "will completely crush her enemies. But the main enemy beyond the borders of Russia is the camp of bellicose imperialism, especially Fascist countries."

In the north, heavy fighting broke out along the Peiping-Hankow Railway today after several days of quietness. Fierce engagements also took place in North Shansi, where Japanese forces were proceeding with mopping-up operations against several Chinese mobile units that have been very active in harassing the Japanese line of communications.

December 11

Japanese soldiers entered the western area of the settlement today and paraded along Kiaochow Road, distributing handbills written in Chinese. The handbills advised the Chinese not to be frightened and to carry on with their business as usual.

A large group of Japanese soldiers, veterans of the local hostilities, returned from the Wusih and Changshu areas today by boats and junks down the Soochow Creek, disembarking at North Soochow Road near the Post Office building.

From Washington comes the news today that the 6th Regiment, U.S. Marines, would be withdrawn from Shanghai at the discretion of Admiral Harry E. Yarnell, Commander-in-Chief of the U.S. Asiatic Fleet. On withdrawal, they will return to their base at San Diego.

The Dollar liner, President Hoover, ran aground early this morning on a small island, south of Formosa. Rescue work was found very difficult owing to the heavy seas running, but according to a wireless report from the ship all passengers were safely landed ashore.

Japanese forces entered the "safety zone" in Nantao this afternoon, shortly after 3, and threw a cordon around the entire area following which they began a house-to-house search.

At Nanking, the Japanese forces after withstanding several counter-attacks from the Chinese around the Kwanghwa Gate last evening, commenced another concerted attack on the former capital early this morning. During the fighting this morning, the Chinese brought into play trench mortars, machineguns and rifles to stem off the Japanese attack. The Japanese units used mountain guns, one-pounders, tanks and machineguns but received stubborn resistance from the Chinese.

Commencing at 10:00 a.m., the Japanese launched furious attacks on the city from three different directions using machineguns and tanks to cover the advance of the infantrymen, while a terrific bombardment from artillery batteries into the Chinese positions were maintained throughout the morning. Further support was being lent the attacking forces from the air when scores of planes dropped tons of explosives into the doomed city. Although sections of the Chinese defenses were made untenable, and Japanese troops had effected an entrance into the city, Chinese troop stubbornly held on after suffering heavy casualties.

Japanese sources announced the capture of Wuhu, a city 60 miles southwest of Nanking today.

In the north, from reports received in Shanghai, the situation is quiet with only the Chinese mobile units harassing the Japanese lines in the rear. In the air, Japanese planes continue their routine bombing of Chinese military bases. In the Tientsin-Pukow area, the Japanese are moving their main forces towards the western part of Shantung.

December 12

News reached Shanghai today that Italy is leaving the League of Nations.

Japanese troops who occupied the Nantao "safety zone" yesterday afternoon retired from the area this morning.

The "Battle of Nanking" continued unabated today and according to observers some of the most furious fighting yet to take place in the present Sino-Japanese hostilities was now going on. Shelling of the Chinese positions by Japanese batteries, said to be located on Purple Mountain for the past twenty-four hours, have caused damaging results to the Chinese defenses. At present the Japanese are consolidating their positions in the southern part of the city with their advance being held up by the stiff resistance they are receiving from the Chinese as well as the several walls of fire in the area they now occupy.

Large concentrations of Japanese troops are being made at Wuhu, which the Japanese captured yesterday. Chinese mobile units were active today in the Wushing area, while the Hangchow sector was reported all quiet.

Although Japanese aerial activities were carried out on a large scale at Nanking today, further raids were undertaken by the Nipponese at Sian, the provincial capital of Shensi province, when 12 planes dropped over 30 bombs in the western outskirts of the city; Nanchang received a visit when 10 planes dropped over 20 bombs outside the city, while the Canton-Kowloon and Canton-Hankow Railways also received the attention of 26 bombers this morning.

December 13

The "Battle of Nanking" continues furiously today, with the Nipponese forces in complete control of the southern section of the city. Chinese troops during the day were withdrawing towards the northern section of the city, fighting a rear-guard action every inch of the way. Advancing up Chungshan Road, the Military Affairs Commission, Military Academy, National Government and Executive Yuan were captured in quick order. During the day's operations Chinese bombers assisted the defenders by bombing the Japanese positions.

Japanese men-of-war were proceeding up river towards Nanking this afternoon after passing through the Nanking boom and were exchanging fire with Chinese batteries at Wulingshan.

Chinese reports claim that mobile units operating behind the Japanese lines have advanced from Changshing to two points at Ishing and Wushing in an attempt to cut the Japanese lines of communication. Sanguinary fighting was continuing along the Shanghai-Hangchow-Ningpo Railway.

With passengers ashore and ships rushing to her rescue, the President Hoover of the Dollar Line, which went aground yesterday, was reported to be in no danger of capsizing or sinking.

Chinese mobile units operating around Nanwei, Pootung, for the past few days, have evacuated the city according to Chinese reports reaching Shanghai today.

By wire through *Domei* comes the report from Tientsin that eleven Chinese political organs announced their dissolution to accelerate the movement for the creation of an independent government in North China.

In the north all is quiet except for Chinese mobile units which continue to harass the Japanese forces in the Shansi area who are continuing to consolidate their positions. Several small advances have been made by the Japanese however in western Hopei where they occupied Laiyuan.

News reached Shanghai today of the bombing and sinking of the United States Gunboat Panay of the Yangtse Patrol, U.S. Asiatic Fleet, by Japanese aircraft yesterday afternoon off Hohsien, Anhwei province, in the Yangtse river about 25 miles above Nanking. Also in addition to the Panay, several Standard Oil Co. ships were sunk. Besides the crew of the Panay several American evacuees from Nanking were aboard the ship at the time of the bombing.

Following the news of the bombing, the U.S.S. Augusta, flagship of the Asiatic Fleet, which was to leave for Manila on August 14, cancelled her sailing date and it was announced that she would stay at Shanghai indefinitely. The U.S.S. Marblehead which recently arrived in Shanghai is also moored in the Whangpoo.

Unofficial information today placed the dead at 18 with the survivors numbering 54, some of whom were wounded. All survivors are reported to be in the vicinity of Hohsien.

Calling on Mr. Clarence Gauss, American Consul General here, Mr. Suemasa Okamoto, Japanese Consul-General, conveyed official expressions of regret regarding the bombing. Meantime, Mr. Shigeru Kawagoe, Japanese Ambassador, communicated with Mr. Nelson Johnson, American Ambassador, now at Hankow, the regrets of his government. Admiral Rokuzo Sugiyama, chief of staff of the Japanese Third Fleet also called on Admiral Harry E. Yarnell, commander-in-chief of the United States Asiatic Fleet, expressing deep regrets over the bombing and sinking of the U.S.S. Panay.

In a wire from Washington it is reported that six members of the U.S.S. Panay are still missing.

In a wire from Peiping it is stated that Marines stationed here have been restricted to the Legation Quarters to prevent possible incidents following the bombing of the U.S.S. Panay.

December 14

The "Panay" bombing featured the news today and in a statement issued this morning by Admiral

Harry E. Yarnell the dead known so far are, Mr. Sandro Sandri, Italian, and Charles L. Ensminger, Panay Storekeeper 1st Class. The complete list of "Panay" survivors and missing men as yet is incomplete, but the following list is one based on the latest information received today. Safe and unharmed: Messrs. D. S. Goldie, J. V. Pickering, J. B. Sherwood, M. Blasina, Peter Mender, B. Jorgenson, Standard Oil Co.; John A. Bonski, Raymond L. Browning, Thomas A. Colemen, John A. Dirnhofer, Joseph A. Graves, William T. Hoyle, Vernon F. Puckett, U.S.S. Panay; Captain Frank Roberts, George Atcheson, Jr., and J. Hall Paxton, U.S. Embassy; Mr. Vines, British American Tobacco Co.

Located, But Wounded

Messrs. Jim Marshall, Colliers; Captain J. J. Hughes, Lieutenant A. F. Anders, U.S.S. Panay; E. P. Gossie, U.S. Embassy.

Whereabouts Unknown

(Although may be with one of the parties ashore which have not been contacted).

Messrs. Weldon James, United Press; P. J. Broderick, Chinese Maritime Customs; A. L. Patterson, China Airmotive Company; Albert Ros, Italian Embassy; Luigi Barazini and Sandro Sandri, Italian journalists; Roy Squires, Shanghai business man; Norman Alley, Universal Newsreel. Norman Soong, *New York Times;* C. H. Carlson, Standard Oil Co., Eric Mayell, Fox Movietone.

It is expected that most of the wounded foreigners and other survivors of the bombing would be brought to Shanghai aboard warships now standing by, off Hohsien, in the Yangtse. The Japanese "flying hospital" which flew to Wuhu this morning returned to Shanghai without any of the survivors this afternoon.

From official sources in America came the announcement that the United States policy on the U.S.S. Panay bombing incident would not be decided on politically, but on national patriotic basis. From press reports, arriving here on the status of the American Press, it is quite evident that the "incident" is considered very serious and is becoming a national topic of conversation.

From London comes the report also that apologies have already been made to Sir Robert Craigie, British Ambassador to Japan, by Mr. Koki Hirota, Japanese Foreign Minister, for the bombing and shelling of British shipping as well as men-of-war around Wuhu.

According to a *Domei* report today, a new provisionary government of the Republic of China was formed at Peking and formally inaugurated at Chujen Hall at 11:00 a.m. Immediately following the ceremony it was announced that the East Hopei Autonomous Anti-Communist Government, created in 1935, would be disbanded and would be merged with the new government.

From official sources in Tokyo it is reported that the fall of Nanking would not be the end of the local hostilities, but would be continued until all anti-Japanese elements in China have been suppressed.

In Hongkew, the scene of much fighting in the early stages of the hostilities around Shanghai, Japanese civilians celebrated the fall of Nanking with a parade through "Little Tokyo."

Owing to the local situation, notification was received by the local offices of Twentieth-Century Fox Films that President Roosevelt's Speech at Chicago had been censored and accordingly omitted from the newsreel.

December 15

On the recommendition of the Commissioner of Police, the Municipal Council has decided to remove the present curfew restrictions on Christmas Eve, December 24, and New Year's Eve, December 31, it was announced today.

According to Chinese reports, Mr. O. K. Yui, former Mayor of Shanghai up till the time of Japanese occupation, has been appointed managing director of the Central Trust, with offices in Hankow.

The Japanese spokesman this morning admitted that Chinese troops in the northwest section of Nanking were still giving the Japanese forces in Nanking considerable trouble, but he expected that within the next day or two the situation would be changed as mopping-up operations are being successfully carried out.

In a proclamation plastered throughout the former capital, issued by General Iwane Matsui, he asks the former populace to return to the city of their ancestors as the Japanese army forces would take every measure to guard their safety, lives and business. Today, Japanese flags were fluttering from all the former government buildings.

A Japanese seaplane this afternoon brought to Shanghai three of the wounded survivors of the Panay bombing.

In a surprise attack, it was learned today, the Japanese forces captured Yangchow, about 12 miles north of Chinkiang, along the Yangtse.

Following the completion of rescue work of the Panay bombing, the U.S.S. Augusta announced today, the complete casualty list as follows; three dead, four seriously wounded, 11 slightly wounded and 61 injured. According to the latest communication received, the following is a complete list of casualties and survivors.

Dead

Sandro Sandri, Italian journalist.
Charles L. Ensminger, storekeeper first class.
Captain C. H. Carlson, Master, S.S. Meian.

Seriously Injured

Carl H. Birk, electrician's mate first class.
Edgar W. G. Hulsebus, coxswain.

Kenneth J. Rice, electrician's mate third class.
Peres D. Ziegler, ship's cook third class.

Injured

Civilians: E. Gassie, American Embassy, *Naval Personnel:* Lieutenant Commander J. J. Hughes, U.S.N., commanding officer, U.S.S. Panay.
Lieutenant A. F. Anders, U.S.N., executive officer, U.S.S. Panay.
Lieutenant (jg.) J. W. Geist, U.S.N., U.S.S. Panay.
Raymond L. Browning, electrician's mate third class.
Newton L. Davis, fireman first class.
Cecil B. Green, seaman first class.
Alex Kozak, machinist's mate second class.
John H. Lang, chief quarter-master.
Charles S. Schroyer, seaman first class.

Uninjured

Civilians: G. Atcheson Jr., American Embassy.
J. H. Paxton, American Embassy.
Norman Alley, Universal News.
Weldon James, United Press.
Norman Soong, New York Times.
L. Barzini, Italian journalist.
H. Ros, Italian Embassy.
Eric Mayell, Fox Movietone.
M. McDonald, London Times.
Roy Squires, Shanghai business man.

The following Standard Oil personnel are uninjured: Messrs. Pickering, Sherwood, Jorgensen, Mender, Blasini, and Golding, Captain F. N. Roberts, U.S.A., assistant military attache, is uninjured.

The following Naval personnel are uninjured: Ensign D. H. Biwerse, U.S.N., U.S.S. Panay; Lieutenant C. G. Grazier, (Medical Corps), U.S.N., U.S.S. Panay; Charles S. Adams, radioman second class; Tony Barba, Jr., ship's cook third class; John A. Bonkoski, gunner's mate third class; Ernest C. Branch, fireman first class; Walter Cheatham, coxswain; Thomas A. Coleman, chief pharmacist's mate; Edward E. Cowden, coxswain; John A. Dirnhofer, seaman first class; Ting Ducey, mess attendant first class; mayer, carpenter's mate first class; Emery F. Fisher, chief Yuan T. Erh, mess attendant first class; Fred G. Fichtenwatertender; Michael Gerent, machinist's mate second class; Joseph A. Granes, gunner's mate first class; Robert R. Hebard, fireman first class, John N. Hennessy, gunner's mate second class; John L. Hodge, fireman first class; William T. Hoyle, machinist's mate second class; Fon B. Huffman, watertender second class; Karl H. Kerske, coxswain; Karl H. Johnson, machinist's mate second class; Peter H. Klumpers, chief machinist's mate; William P. Lander, seaman first class; Ernest R. Mahlmann, chief boatswain's mate; William A. McCabe, fireman first class; Stanley W. McEowen, seaman first class; James T. Murphy, radioman third class; Janes H. Peck, quartermaster second class; Reginald Peterson, radioman second class; Vernon F. Puckett, chief machinist's mate; Maurice D. Rider, coxswain; Antonio Rinaldi, seaman first class; Thomas M. Spindle, quartermaster third class; King F. Homer W. Truax, boatswain's mate first class; Harry B. Sung, mess attendant first class; John P. Tenny, coxswain; Homer W. Truax, boatswain's mate first class; Harry B. Tuck, seaman first class; Cleo Waxler, boatswain's mate second class; John T. Weber, yeoman first class; Gerald L. Weimers, machinist's mate first class; Marcus V. Williamson, fireman first class; Andy R. Wisler, radioman first class; Far Ze Wong, mess attendant first class.

Mr. J. Marshall of Colliers; condition unspecified, Mr. Vines of B.A.T., slightly wounded, and J. L. Hodge of the Panay are now in Wuhu. All other personnel except those dead and those listed in Wuhu are now on board the Oahu or British ships.

In a press release from the U.S.S. Augusta it is reported that Mr. McDonald of the London Times, who was among the first batch of survivors, reports the Panay was hit by a bomb from a great height and was abandoned at 2.05 p.m., sinking at 3.54 p.m. and that she was machine-gunned by two Japanese motor landing craft, boarded and left by them before she sank. Her colors were flying, clearly visible the whole time.

The American note to Japan over the Panay bombing was as follows:

"The essential facts are these: American vessels were on the Yangtze River by the uncontested and incontestable right that they were flying the American flag, that they were engaged in legitimate appropriate business, that they at the moment were conveying American official and private personnel away from points where danger developed, that they several times changed positions and were moving up-river to avoid danger and that they were attacked by Japanese bombing planes."

"Since the beginning of the present unfortunate hostilities between Japan and China, the Japanese Government and various Japanese authorities at various points repeatedly assured the Government authorities of the United States that it is the intention and purpose of the Japanese Government and Japanese armed forces to respect fully the rights and interests of other Powers."

"On several occasions, however, the acts of the Japanese armed forces violated the rights of the United States, seriously endangered the lives of American nationals and destroyed American property."

"On several instances, the Japanese Government admitted the facts, expressed their regrets and gave assurance that every precaution would be taken against recurrence of such. In the present case, the acts of Japanese armed forces have taken place in complete disregard of American rights. They have

taken life and destroyed American property, both public and private."

"Under these circumstances, the Government of the United States expects from the Japanese Government a formally recorded expression of regret, the undertaking to make complete and comprehensive indemnifications and the assurance that definite and specific steps have been taken which will insure hereafter that American nationals, and property in China will not be subjected to attack by Japanese armed forces or unlawful interference by any Japanese authority or forces whatsoever."

The text of Foreign Minister Hirota's note to Ambassador Grew follows:

"While it is clear in the light of the above circumstances that the present incident was due to a mistake, the Japanese Government profoundly regrets that it has caused damages to a United States man-of-war and ships, and casualties among those aboard, and desires to present hereby its sincere apologies."

"The Japanese Government will make indemnification for all losses and deal appropriately with those responsible for the incident. Furthermore, they already have issued strict orders to the authorities on the spot with a view to preventing the recurrence of a similar incident."

"The Japanese Government, in the fervent hope that friendly relations between Japan and the United States will not be affected by this unfortunate affair, have frankly stated, as above, their sincere attitude which I beg your excellence to make known to your government."

December 16

In a Japanese report today, it is stated that extreme care was taken by the Japanese forces in the fighting around Nanking to avoid damage to the Ming Tombs, the Chungshan Mausoleum and other structures of historical interest in and around Nanking.

Following an attack on a Japanese sentry from an unknown Chinese in Nantao, who escaped into the Nantao Safety Zone, several Chinese suspects were being examined by the Japanese gendarmerie today. This afternoon, the Japanese were still continuing a house-to-house search of the area in an attempt to locate the individual responsible for the attack.

In Tientsin, a report from there states that the three-day old new Provisional Government has taken over the Chinese Maritime Customs at Tientsin and Chinwangtao.

It was announced today that the Japanese Navy recalled Rear-Admiral Teizo Mitsunami, Chief of Aerial Operations following the Panay bombing. It is understood that he will be relieved of his post.

The four vessels bringing to Shanghai the remainder of the survivors from the Panay bombing on the Yangtse, off Hohsien, Anhwei province, are expected to arrive in Shanghai tomorrow afternoon.

Although eye witnesses state that the Panay was machine-gunned by Japanese soldiers from two Military launches, Japanese officials today still claim that this information was incorrect. The Navy speaker emphasized, that the Navy could not possibly be responsible for the machine-gunning as there were no Naval launches on that part of the river at the time of the "incident."

Three survivors of the Panay bombing are already in Shanghai, being brought here by a Japanese plane yesterday.

Japanese forces have crossed the Yangtse river near Pukow and have already contacted the Chinese troops in their new lines, where they have firmly entrenched themselves along the North bank of the Yangtse.

The Hangchow Bay area as well as the Shanghai-Hangchow Railway sector were quiet today, except for small clashes along the Railway between the opposing outposts.

Led by General Iwane Matsui, commander-in-chief of the Japanese expeditionary forces in Central China, thousands of Japanese troops paraded through Nanking this morning while overhead, roared scores of aeroplanes, both military and naval.

December 17

Japanese were active in the air today, bombing Chinese troop concentrations as well travelling to Canton where they once again bombed the Canton-Kowloon Railway, dropping ten bombs to cause small damage to the tracks. Another six planes were reported to have bombed the Canton-Hankow line with the damage done unknown.

Following yesterday's entry into Nanking, the opening chapter of the Sino-Japanese hostilities in Central China were brought to a close when Japanese infantry, bluejackets and mechanized units made an entry into the former capital, according to *Domei*. In Shanghai, "Little Tokyo" celebrated the fall of Nanking with parades, general feastings and celebrations.

In the "Nantao Safety Zone" Japanese patrols took over active policing of the area and the day and night passed without any incidents.

Following the fall of Nanking, Hsuchowfu is considered and generally believed to be the next objective of the Japanese forces, with Hankow a further objective. According to Chinese reports, if Japanese advances are made on these two cities, stiff resistance will be met from Chinese soldiery now occupying the surrounding areas. It is also reported that a new boom on the Yangtse is being made just south of Kiukiang.

Severe fighting is reported going on at Yangchow where the city has received a terrific bombardment from Japanese guns. Across the Yangtse from Nanking, both Pukow and Puchen have already fallen into the hands of the Japanese, with the Japanese continuing marching northwestwards. The Hangchow Bay sector remains quite, and from reports, it is ex-

pected that the Chinese will stage a counter-offensive before long in this area in an attempt to divert Japanese troop concentration in the Nanking-Pukow-Chingkiang area. Although no severe fighting has broken out along the Shanghai-Hangchow Railway, Chinese expect that the Japanese will shortly commence an offensive in this sector, with Nanchang, in the Kiangsi province, as their main objective.

A communique was issued by Admiral K. Hasegawa this morning, in which he states that the present hostilities are not over as well as to stress the aims of Japan. The communique was as follows:

"The present hostilities were brought about in the Shanghai area as a result of Chinese provocation and disregard of Japanese policy against aggravation of the situation."

"In less than 100 days, the Japanese forces have dispersed the Chinese troops and now are about to make an historic entry into Nanking. This success can be attributed to the august virtues of the Emperor as well as the intense belief of the soldiers and sailors, and their officers, that justice demanded retribution be meted out to China. As a result, operations were carried out on the land, the sea and in the air."

"However, many today are unable to join us in this rejoicing having met death in carrying out their duties. The Japanese government considers the situation as far from settled."

"The armed forces of the Empire are determined to carry out to a conclusion the purpose of the present expedition, thus replying to the hopes and wishes of the nation for establishment of lasting peace in the Orient."

"Since the outbreak of the present hostilities, the Japanese government has made great efforts to protect the interests of third parties. This objective was being carried out when, unfortunately in recent days, unhappy incidents have occurred involving American and British warships, and others."

"This I deplore from the bottom of my heart, I am taking whatever steps found necessary, and will carry them out in sincerity and good faith."

At 4.45 this afternoon, the survivors of the Panay bombing arrived in Shanghai aboard American and British men-of-war. Survivors of the incident confirmed reports of the machine-gunning of the ship following the bombing.

At the Japanese press conference this evening, the Japanese spokesman still denied that the Panay was machine-gunned, although it had been announced officially from Washington that the ship had been definitely machine-gunned from reports received from the U.S. Gunboat Oahu.

December 18

Following the loss of Pukow, Chinese troops are reported to have consolidated their positions at Chuchow, a village in North Anhwei province along the Tientsin-Pukow Railway in an attempt to stop the Japanese drive northwards to Hsuchowfu an important railway juncture where the Lunghai and Tientsin-Pukow Railway meet. It is understood from reliable sources that the Chinese have rushed reinforcements into their positions and that Chuchow will be the scene of major hostilities before long.

Yangchow, a village on the Yangtse which has been having the attention of the Japanese heavy guns lately has been evacuated by the Chinese and it is stated that they, according to Chinese reports, have taken up positions north and west of the city.

Fighting is reported along the Shanghai-Hangchow Railway line, with the Chinese claiming that they have stopped the advance of the Japanese towards Hangchow.

It was announced today that a complete reorganization of China's military, political and diplomatic corps were under way and was being done, to further the prolongment of the "War of Resistance" against Japan. It is claimed that General Chiang Kai-shek, commander-in-chief of China's armies will still remain in command and continue to head the state as president of the Executive Yuan with all the routine affairs of his office being handled by his brother-in-law, Dr. H. H. Kung, Vice-President of the Executive Yuan and Minister of Finance and further that Dr. T. V. Soong will assume the role as sole representative for the government in the purchasing of war materials from abroad. Another feature of the governmental changes are that closer cooperation is to be made between the Kuomintang and ex-Communist leaders and the inclusion of Soviet military officers in the training of China's fighting forces.

The Japanese spokesman announced that a new enquiry into the "Panay incident" was ordered by the Japanese military and naval authorities following survivors' statements that the Panay was machine-gunned by airplanes and surface boats after its bombing.

In *Domei* reports from Tokyo, the Naval Section of the Imperial General Headquarters announced that nine hundred pounds of explosives were dropped by Japanese naval planes in the course of their raids over different areas in Central China. It is also reported that the French Ambassador to Japan, Mr. Charles Arsene Henry, called at the Japanese Ministry for Foreign Affairs and asked for assurances from the Japanese authorities that measures will be taken for the security of French steamers and warships anchored at Hankow.

Wire reports from London claim that an international air force is now flying for China and that they have already been in combat with Japanese planes. Further that Soviet planes with Russian fliers have also been in combat with Japanese aircraft, and that in the aerial battle eleven Japanese planes out of a squadron of fifteen were brought down.

Reports were current in Shanghai that several Chinese civic leaders were attempting to form a local government with the approval of the Chinese Government, not to be branded "traitors," to meet the social needs of the Chinese populace here in Shanghai.

December 19

According to Chinese reports, the Japanese forces have continued their westward push after a lull of several days, following the fall of Wuhu and Nanking. Large scale operations were reported being under way along the north bank of the Yangtse River from Yangchow to Pukow. Fighting was taking place around Wuhu, with the Chinese claiming no changes in their positions. On the Kashing-Hangchow highway, Japanese motorized units were reported active and were making slight gains in the Tsungteh sector, south of Shihmen. Along the Shanghai-Hangchow Railway sector, Japanese forces were pushing forward with an attempt being made to join forces with Japanese troops operating along the Kashing-Hangchow highway.

Tsingtao, China's leading holiday resort, became the center of news today, when it was learned that Chinese commenced the blowing up of Japanese mills at 8 o'clock last night, to bring to this port the full impact of the present Sino-Japanese hostilities. Fourteen explosions were said to have taken place last evening with a further six this morning. Estimated damage is said to be $300,000,000.

Owing to the tension at Tsingtao, the U.S.S. Augusta, which was due to sail for Manila today, postponed its departure from this port indefinitely. At dawn this morning, the U.S.S. Pope left for Tsingtao, with the U.S.S. Marblehead following shortly after 11 o'clock.

The fourth foreigner to die in the Japanese bombing of the U.S.S. Panay on the Yangtse river, off Hohsien, took place this morning when Coxswain Edgar W. G. Hulsebus died of his wounds at the Country Hospital.

News reached Shanghai of the death of the United States Ambassador to Great Britain, Mr. Robert Worth Bingham, at the age of 66, at Baltimore.

December 20

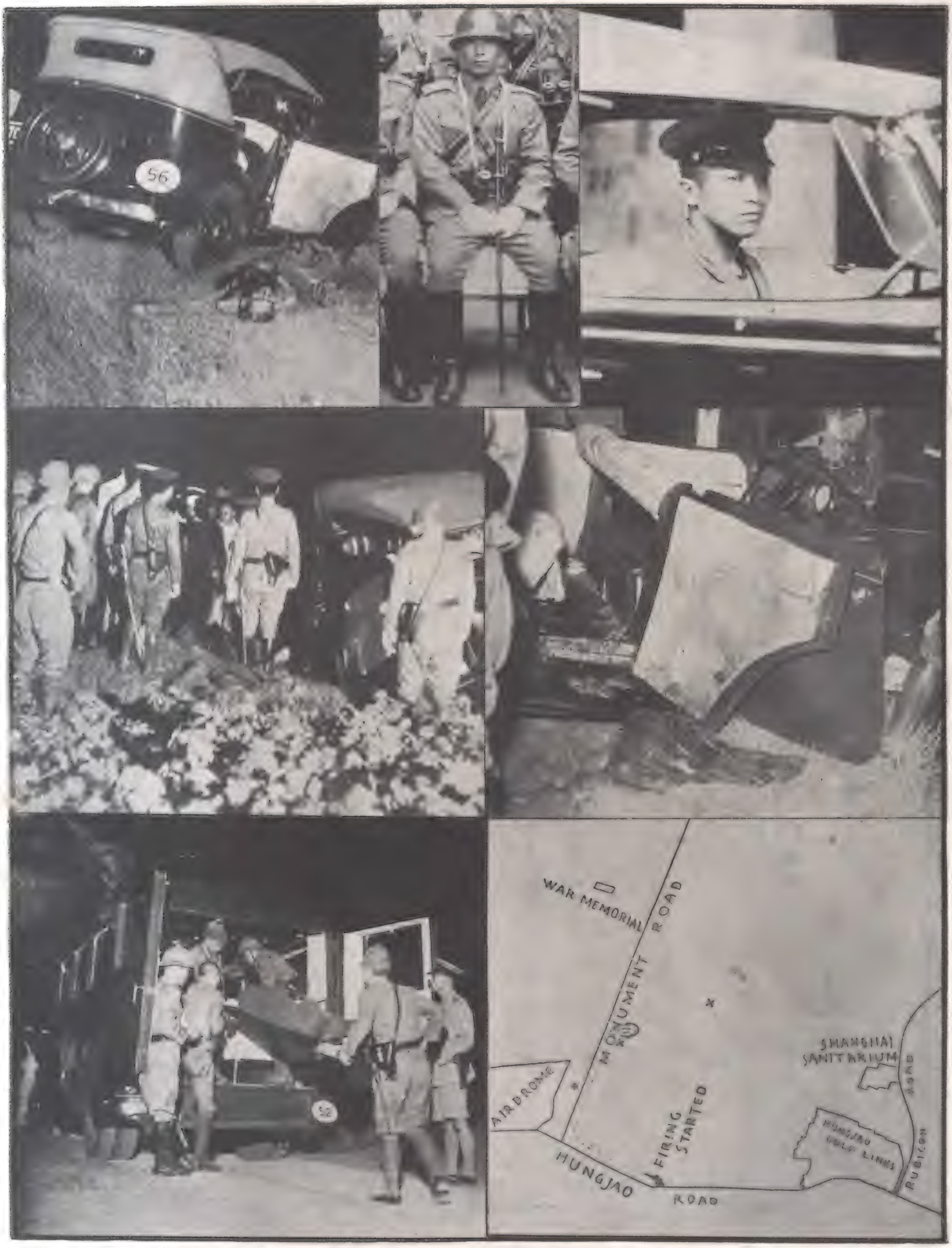
From reports reaching Shanghai, it is said that Tsingtao is quiet today following yesterday's razing of Japanese mills by the Chinese. It is also reported that wharves have been seriously damaged to make difficult any attempt by the Japanese to land troops in the harbor area. Large numbers of Chinese troops are remaining in the city while the civilian populace are deserting the environs of the "holiday port" by the hundreds for more distant places inland.

Japanese troops in the Hangchow Bay sector are pushing onto Hangchow from three points today with the fighting growing in intensity. The three routes that the Japanese are taking are the Shanghai-Hangchow Railway, Shanghai-Hangchow highway and the Kashing-Hangchow highway. Chinese mobile units in these areas are reported to be very active in harassing the Japanese rear. These tactics on the part of the Chinese have made the Japanese use more troops to protect their rear than was anticipated.

North of the Yangtse river, the Japanese are continuing their push towards Hsuchowfu in an attempt to cut off the Chinese troops now in Shantung province.

In a *Domei* report from Hongkong, it is stated that a Japanese resident officer in Hongkong was attacked by a Chinese mob at Shatowkou, in the British leased territory facing Bias Bay, yesterday afternoon.

In an interview with newspapermen following the memorial service for Japanese dead at Nanking, General Iwane Matsui, Commander-in-Chief of the Japanese forces in Central China is reported as stating: "that further operations by Japanese forces are entirely in the hands of Generalissimo Chiang Kai-shek and the Chinese Government."



The above are scenes taken at the Hungjao Airdrome, August 9th, following the slaying of two members of the Japanese Naval Landing Party. TOP *(Left)* The bullet-riddled car with body of Japanese officer lying alongside. *(Middle)* Photo of the dead officer. *(Right)* Seaman Yozo Saito, also killed, at the wheel of his car. MIDDLE: *(Left)* Chinese and Japanese investigators as well as newsmen at the scene of the tragedy. *(Right)* Blood-stained door of car with part of the brains of Officer killed shown on the running board. BOTTOM: *(Left)* Body of Officer being lifted into an ambulance. *(Right)* Map of the extreme southwest corner of the western outside road area. The Japanese car, while travelling along Hungjao Road near the Airdrome, was challenged by Chinese guards and failing to stop was fired upon. The square between the road and the Airdrome is where the Chinese sentry was shot. The car ran off the road further on. "X" marking the spot where the Japanese officer fell. The Japanese seaman's body was found about 400 yards northeast of the car and is marked with another "X".



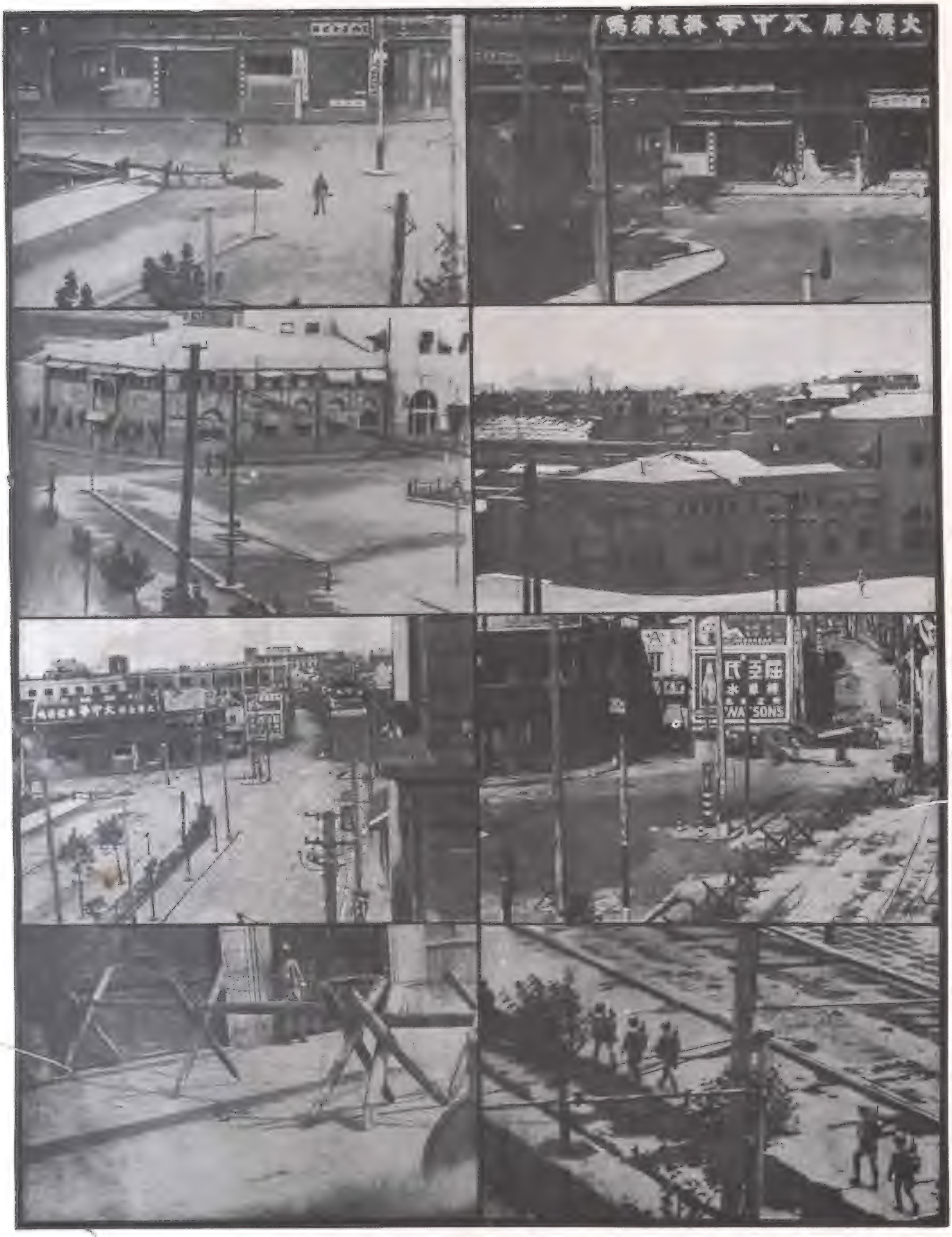
TOP ROW: *(Left)* Members of the Chinese 88th Division breaking down bamboo fencing around an emplacement at the crossing of the Woosung Railway with Paoshan Road. *(Right)* 88th Division men taking up positions at the corner of Hsiang San and Pao Chong Roads, Chapei. SECOND ROW: *(Left)* and *(Right)* Sandbag emplacements erected on Jukong Road, awaiting the arrival of the 88th Division. THIRD ROW: *(Left)* Along Paoshan Road during the afternoon of August 12th, with refugees still evacuating the area. *(Right)* Members of the 88th Division taking up positions on Jukong Road, Chapei during the afternoon of August 12th. BOTTOM: *(Left)* Corner of Jukong and Paoshan Roads during the afternoon of August 12th with refugees still heading for the safety of the International Settlement. *(Right)* The same spot as the picture on the left, taken from a different angle.



TOP ROW: *(Left)* Members of the Chinese 88th Division on Paoshan Road, August 12, the day before hostilities opened up in Shanghai. *(Right)* Sandbag barricade in Chapei, erected during the evening of August 11th. SECOND ROW: *(Left)* Trench mortar pack mules on Jukong Road, August 12th. *(Right)* Sandbag barricade in front of the Chapei Bus Co.'s head office, the day before fighting commenced with refugees evacuating in the foreground. THIRD ROW: *(Left) and (Right)* Sandbag barricade erected on Chungshan Road bridge at the junction of Jessfield Road by members of the Peace Preservation Corps on August 13. BOTTOM: *(Left)* Sandbag emplacement being erected by members of the Chapei Police Force, the afternoon of August 13th. on Chungshan Road. *(Right)* Trees, sandbags and barbed wire were used by the Chinese in forming a barricade across the Woosung Military Road, August 12th.



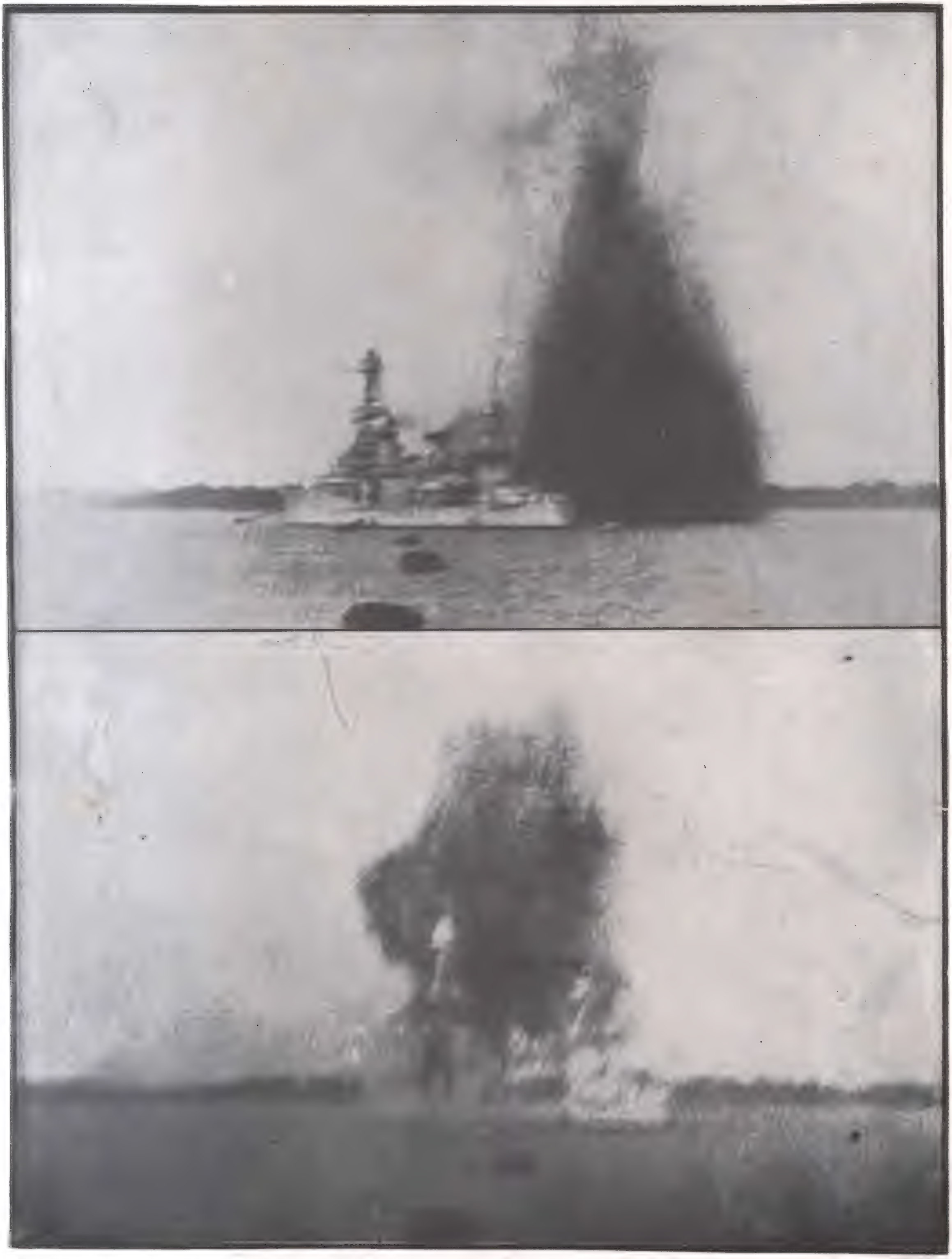
On the evening of August 12th, the Chinese threw a "boom" across the Whangpoo from the Nantao Bund to close the river. Several small steamers and junks were sunk in the operation which lasted throughout the night. The boom remained intact until November 12th, at which time Nantao was completely occupied by the Japanese forces. Following their occupation, Naval units from the Third Fleet pulled a large size steamer away to open up the boom. This gave access to the upper reaches of the Whangpoo, which the Japanese were not slow in using as a line of communication to rush up supplies to their troops who had already begun a large scale "push on Sungkiang.



TOP ROW: *(Left)* Members of the 88th Chinese Division occupying Paoshan Road, Chapei, August 14th. *(Right)* The same spot two weeks later. SECOND ROW: *(Left)* The North Station on August 14th. *(Right)* As it was two weeks later, note the shell-hole in the roof. THIRD ROW: *(Left)* Corner of Paoshan and Boundary Roads August 14th. *(Right)* The same area with barbed wire strung along Boundary Road on August 15th. BOTTOM: *(Left)* Chinese members of the 88th Division stationed alongside the Commercial Press building on Paoshan Road the afternoon of August 13th. *(Right)* 88th Division members in the North Station area.



Top: Shanghai's Bund during the first days of the hostilities, showing Sassoon House at the corner of Nanking Road with the new Bank of China building alongside, under construction. The Palace Hotel which was hit by a bomb on August 14th, as was the Cathay Hotel, is the building at the left of Sasson House. **Bottom:** Shanghai's Bund from the Garden Bridge, showing refugees from the Eastern area streaming along the Bund following the air-raids by Chinese planes on August 14th.



While the U.S.S. Augusta, flagship of the American Asiatic Fleet, was proceeding up the Whangpoo River to her buoys (36 and 37) on August 14, after a fast trip from Tsingtao, Chinese planes, raiding Shanghai at the time, directed two bombs at her, apparently mistaking her for a Japanese warship. Fortunately, they missed their mark, dropping into the muddy waters of the Whangpoo.



TOP: *(Left)* Members of the 15th U.S. Infantry, erecting sand bag emplacement on Bureau Street, Tientsin. *(Middle)* French troops manning an emplacement in the French Concession, Tientsin *(Right)* 15th U.S. Infantrymen at Tientsin on the alert for eventualities in their sector. Second ROW: *(Left)* French Colonial troops in a dugout somewhere along the Tientsin perimeter. *(Middle)* Japanese armoured car at Tientsin East Station. *(Right)* Japanese mobile unit, which can be operated on land and rails at Tientsin. Third ROW: *(Left)* Japanese troops entering Peiping last July. *(Right)* Japanese Infantrymen marching along the Hatamen, Peiping. BOTTOM: *(Left)* Japanese wounded awaiting transportation to hospital at Tientsin. *(Right)* Refugees crossing the Hai Ho river, Tientsin, from the ex-Russian Concession to the British Bund.



TOP: *(Left)* British volunteers loading dead bodies onto a truck following the bombing of the Palace and Cathay Hotels, August 14th, by Chinese planes whose real objective was the H.I.J.M.S. *Idzumo*. *(Right)* Devastating scenes mingled with horror struck the eyes of spectators on Nanking Road, following the bombing of two of Shanghai's leading hotels. MIDDLE: *(Left)* The Palace Hotel, showing the shattered top floor. *(Right)* Burnt out motor car in front of the entrance to the Cathay Hotel. BOTTOM: *(Left)* Another car marooned in the center of Nanking Road following the bombing in which hundreds lost their lives. *(Right)* Trucks of every description were used to remove the dead bodies as well as the debris.



TOP: Death and destruction, unparalleled in the history of Shanghai, took place on August 14, at the corner of Avenue Edward VII and Boulevard de Montigny, when a Chinese plane loosened its bombs owing to a damaged bomb rack. BOTTOM: Truck-loads of the victims were removed from the bombed area, the majority of whom were buried in common graves.



TOP: Death and desolation, strewn over the junction of Avenue Edward VII, Boulevard de Montigny and Yu Ya-ching Roads, a scene too horrible to describe meeting the cameraman, following the bombing by a Chinese planes on August 14th. BOTTOM: Members of the French Fire Brigade throwing a hose onto a burning car. Notice the dead body lying alongside the car with legs stretched over the rear bumper



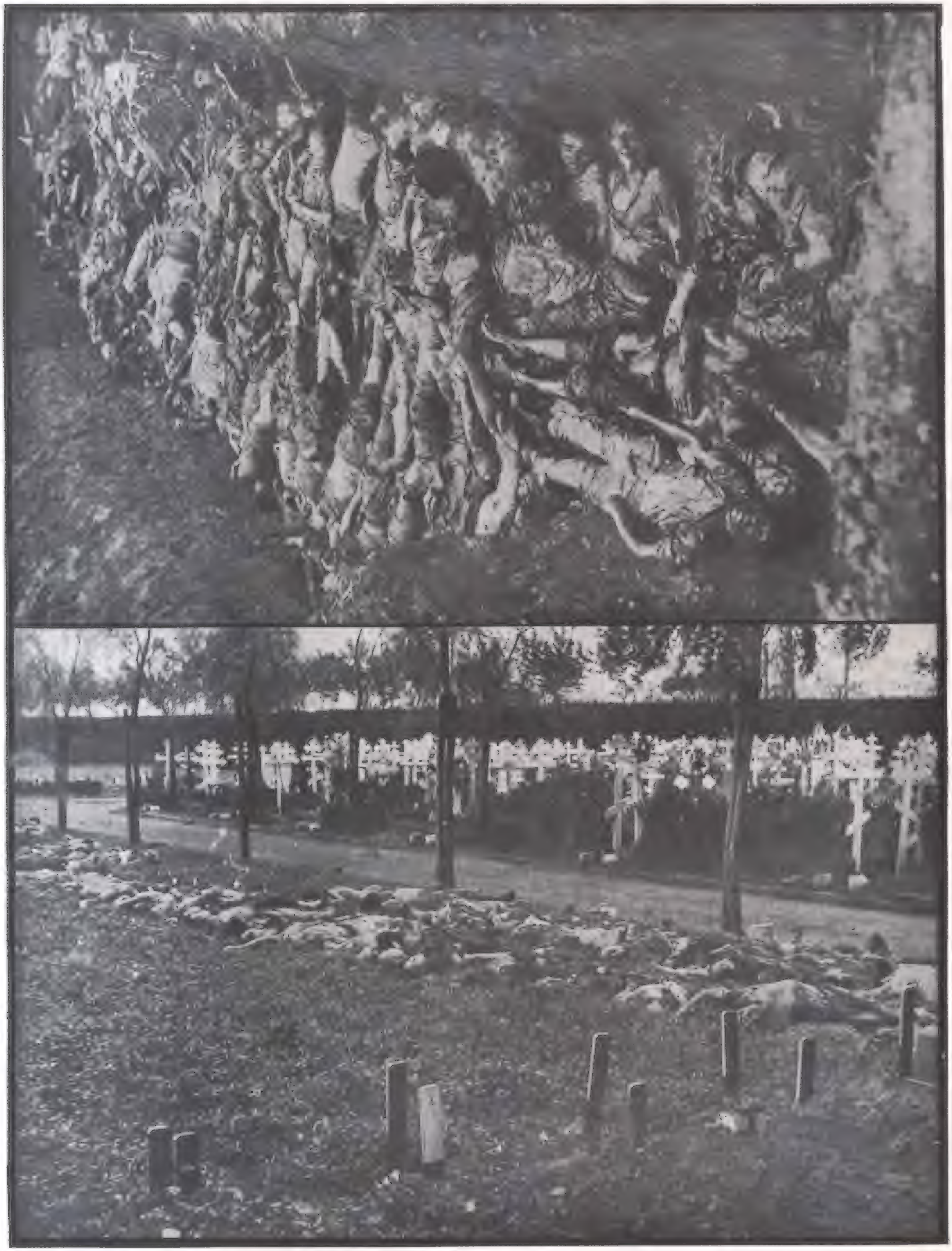
TOP: Another scene of the devastating destruction in front of the Great World Amusement Center, following the bombing on August 14th. BOTTOM: Water and blood mixed ran off the streets into the gutters when the French Fire Brigade used their hoses to quelch the several fires started from the bomb. Human bodies were burnt beyond recognition in several motor cars, while others shared the same fate along the streets.



Further scenes at the corner of Boulevard de Montigny and Avenue Edouard VII, French Concession which gave August 14 the name of "Bloody Saturday," and a day long to be remembered by the populace of Shanghai in years come as a day of death and destruction, too horrible to describe.



Scenes at the corner of Boulevard de Montigny and Avenue Edward VII and along Boulevard de Montigny following the bombing of August 14, which gave the day the name of "Bloody Saturday," a name truly justified. Yeoman work was done by members of both the Settlement and French Fire Brigades as well as the police forces in cleaning up the debris.



TOP: *(Left)* Following the bombing of Boulevard de Montigny, French Concession, where hundreds of Chinese, the majority refugees, lost their lives to give the day, August 14th, the name of "Bloody Saturday." Many bodies were buried in common graves as shown in the picture. BOTTOM: Bodies lying in the French cemetery awaiting identification and burial.



TOP ROW: Farewell scenes such as these were enacted on the Shanghai Customs Jetty when women and children were hurriedly evacuated from the Shanghai area to the tune of anti-aircraft fire. SECOND ROW: *(Left)* The local Russian community turned out *en mass* to greet relatives and friends when the "Rosalie Moller" brought stranded holiday-makers to Shanghai from Tsingtao. *(Right)* Another scene along the Settlement Bund when women and children were evacuated from Shanghai during the first few days of the hostilities. THIRD ROW: Chinese refugees fleeing from Hongkew on August 12, following the occupation of Chapei by the Chinese 88th Division. BOTTOM: *(Left)* Scenes such as this met the eye along North Szechuen Road on the afternoon of August 12. *(Right)* Thousands of Chinese refugees packed junks and boats on Soochow Creek during the first few days of hostilities.



TOP: *(Left)* Overhead railway bridge of the Shanghai South Station, Nantao, wrecked by Japanese bombs. *(Right)* Dead bodies littered the station area following the explosions. MIDDLE: *(Left)* More death scenes taken immediately following the bombing. *(Right)* Scenes of wreckage met the eyes following the terrific detonations which were audible throughout the Shanghai area BOTTOM: *(Left)* Six Japanese bombers flying in formation, high among the clouds over Nantao. *(Right)* Death and destruction, too horrible to describe, met relatives and rescuers on their arrival at the scene of the bombing.



TOP: A.P.C. Oil tank going up in flames at the "Point" in Yangtsepoo, supposedly to have been started by an incendiary bomb dropped from a Chinese plane which raided the area just before the flames shot skyward. In the foreground is the *Idzumo*, berthed alongside the Japanese Consulate buildings off Whangpoo Road which were the scene of many a Chinese air raid as well as shelling from the Chinese batteries in Pootung. BOTTOM: The burning of Yangtsepoo taken from the western district. In the right foreground is the Grosvenor House, while the large building in the left foreground is the Cathay Mansion. Just to the right of the Cathay Mansions and in the distance, may be seen the Sassoon House.



TOP: *(Left)* Rear Admiral Okuchi with a staff officer posing for photographers at the Naval Landing Barracks, Hongkew. *(Middle)* Direct Chinese Artillery hit on the Naval Landing Barracks. *(Right)* Member of the Naval Landing Party hoisting the Rising Sun flag. MIDDLE: *(Left)* Japanese Marines on the "double" as they entered their barracks. *(Right)* Sandbag barricade at the entrance to the Naval Landing Party headquarters. BOTTOM: *(Left)* Captured Chinese tank. *(Right)* Japanese Marines leaving the Naval Landing barracks for the front.



FIRST ROW: *(Left)* Members of the Japanese Naval Landing Party in a front line position along the Woosung military road. *(Right)* Japanese Marines behind their sandbag emplacement on the Woosung Military Road. SECOND ROW: *(Left)* Japanese light field piece in action on North Szechuen Road. *(Right)* Japanese Marines observing the fire along Dent Road, on Broadway, as well as being on the alert for a Chinese attack from this sector. THIRD ROW: *(Left)* Japanese erecting a sandbag emplacement on Range Road, under the protection of a tank. *(Right)* Japanese Marines advancing into Chapei. BOTTOM: *(Left)* Japanese field piece in action in Hongkew. *(Right)* Japanese Marines on Range Road, north of North Szechuen Road, during the early days of the hostilities.



TOP: *(Left)* Remains of a Chinese sandbag emplacement on Kweiming Road, Yangtzepoo, after being hit by a Japanese shell. Bodies of Chinese soldiers in foreground. *(Right)* A section of the same area with dead Chinese soldiers in the foreground. MIDDLE: *(Left)* Sandbag emplacement used by both the Chinese and Japanese in their bloody battles over the Yangtzepoo area. *(Right)* Bodies of two Chinese Infantrymen along side of the Chusan Road Market, Yangtzepoo. BOTTOM: *(Left)* S.M.C. Chinese Police quarters on Paoting Road, an area which saw heavy fighting during the later part of August *(Right)* Japanese emplacement on Ward Road, Yangtzepoo.



TOP ROW: *(Left)* Chinese machinegun nest at the corner of Paoshan and Boundary Roads, Chapei, manned by members of the 88th Division. *(Right)* Chinese riflemen spread out along Paoshan Road. SECOND ROW: *(Left)* Members of the Chinese 53rd Division pose for the cameraman on taking up positions in the North Station area. *(Right)* More members of the 88th Division spread out along Paoshan Road. THIRD ROW: *(Left)* Members of the 53rd Division preparing an anti-aircraft gun for action in the North Station area. *(Right)* Members of the 88th Division among the ruins of Chapei. BOTTOM ROW: *(Left)* 53rd Division rifleman behind a barricade on Sing Ming Road, Chapei. *(Right)* 53rd Division anti-aircraft unit operating from the North Station area.



TOP: *(Left)* Chinese machinegun emplacement at the corner of Tungsi and Kwang Foh Roads, Chapei. *(Right)* Another Chinese emplacement along Kwang Fah Road, Chapei, manned by members of the Chinese 88th Division. MIDDLE: *(Left)* Members of the Chinese 88th Division in front of the Joint Savings Society's Godown, North Soochow Road. *(Right)* With a fire raging along Chang An Road, Chapei, this American flag fluttered serenely in the breeze. BOTTOM: *(Left)* Fire on Chang An Road, reported to be of incendiary origin by soldiers occupying the area. *(Right)* The Chapei fire brigade "carries on" with hoses laid down on Han Chung Road in an attempt to extinguish the fire on Chang An Road, water being drawn from Soochow Creek.



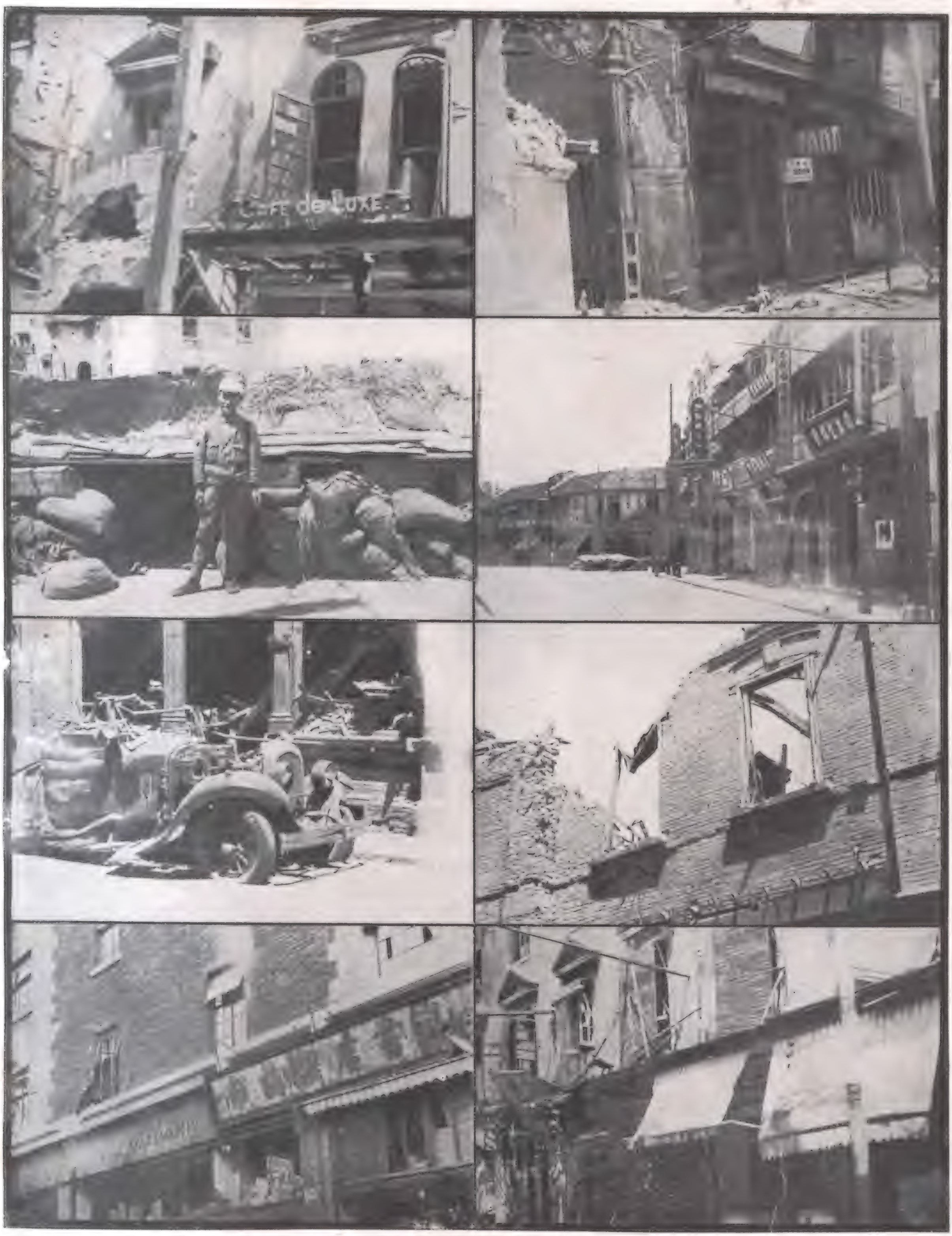
TOP: Bomb explosion in Pootung taken from a high building in the International Settlement. BOTTOM: Low hanging smoke screen covering the Chapei area, following the releasing of 16 large size bombs into the area by a squadron of nine planes. In the right of the picture may be seen the Denis Apartment building. To the left is Medhurst Apartments and further left the Foo Foong Flour Mill situated opposite the Markham Road Railway Yards, Chapei



Two Chapei scenes in the Markham Road Railway Yard when six Japanese Army bombers dropped 16 bombs almost simultaneously into the area. The picture at the top shows the omb explosions immediately following their landing, while the one at the bottom depicts clouds of smoke and debris slowly reaching skyward. Chinese batteries were very active in this area and depite continual bombing from Japanese planes during the day, at nightfall were once again hurling shells into Hongkew and Yangtsepoo.



TOP ROW: *(Left)* Japanese Infantrymen in position outside of Paoshan. *(Right)* Japanese troops manning a sandbag emplacement along Broadway, Yangtsepoo. SECOND ROW: *(Left)* Japanese troops marching along Broadway in front of the Nanyang Tobacco Co.'s buildings. *(Right)* Chinese Curtiss-Hawk plane abandoned in the Far Eastern Race Course and captured by members of the Japanese Naval Landing Party, following the Chinese withdrawal from this area. Japanese claim that the plane was brought down by "archie" fire on August 14 from their guns mounted on the Naval Landing Party's Barracks, Hongkew. THIRD ROW: *(Left)* Japanese field piece emplaced along the Shanghai-Woosung Railway tracks. *(Right)* Officers of the Japanese Naval Landing Party posing for the cameraman at the corner of Jukong and North Szechuen Roads. BOTTOM ROW: *(Left)* Japanese machinegun emplacement atop a building in Hongkew. *(Right)* Japanese search party in Hongkew during the first few days of the hostilities.



TOP ROW: *(Left)* Cafe de Luxe, on North Szechuen Road, hit by a shell just to the left of its neon sign. *(Right)* Scene along North Szechuen Road showing another Chinese shell hit on the entrance of an alleyway. SECOND ROW: *(Left)* Japanese emplacement manned by members of the Japanese Naval Landing Party on North Szechuen Road, south of Hongkew Creek. *(Right)* Japanese emplacement at the corner of North Szechuen and Kong Ying Ka Jao Roads. THIRD ROW: *(Left)* Destroyed motor car on Boone Road following a direct hit from a Chinese shell. *(Right)* Another direct hit on Boone Road from a Chinese gun in Pootung. BOTTOM: *(Left)* The Dixwell Apartments, North Szechuen Road, also received the attention of Chinese gunners as shown from the shattered condition of the street fronts. *(Right)* More damage done by shell-fire to private dwellings along North Szechuen Road.



TOP: *(Left)* Captured Chinese tank on display at the Japanese Naval Landing Barracks, Hongkew. *(Right)* Captured Chinese machineguns held by Japanese Marines at their Hongkew Barracks. MIDDLE: *(Left)* Chinese tank captured in Yangtsepoo from Chinese troops along Chaofoong Road during August when they were attempting to "push" the Japanese towards the Whangpoo. *(Right)* More captured Chinese arms. BOTTOM: View of captured Chinese tank, taken intact, during the August fighting in Chapei. *(Right)* Japanese monoplane bombers getting ready to take off from their Shanghai base.



TOP: The burning of Yangtsepoo during the later part of August taken from the French Concession. Millions of dollars were lost in the conflagration and it will be a long time after the cessation of hostilities before this area can ever return to normalcy. BOTTOM: Another view of the Yangtsepoo fire taken from the Shanghai Bund. Fires raged throughout this area during the Chinese offensive on the eastern district.



TOP ROW: *(Left) H.I.J.M.S. Idzumo,* berthed along the Japanese Consulate in the Whangpoo during the early days of the hostilities. At the left foreground can be seen two anti-aircraft guns mounted atop one of the consulate buildings. *(Right)* Japanese destroyer berthed alongside the *Idzumo.* SECOND ROW: *(Left)* The Japanese hospital ship "America Maru," berthed by the NYK Mail Wharf. On two occasions this boat was under direct fire from Chinese artillery batteries in Pootung. *(Right)* Japanese destroyers anchored in mid-stream of the Whangpoo, opposite the NYK Wayside Wharf. THIRD ROW: *(Left)* "Battleship row," showing the U.S.S. Augusta, flagship of the U.S. Asiatic Fleet in the foreground *(Right)* Another view of "battleship row" showing the Nantao boom in the background. BOTTOM: *(Right)* The U.S. Transport Chaumont anchored in midstream off the French Bund, with members of the 6th Regiment U.S. Marines aboard. *(Right)* The Japanese flagship, *Idzumo,* anchored off Pootung Point with small destroyers at her fore and aft.



TOP: Showing the bombing of the President Hoover by Chinese planes on her scheduled call at Shanghai. Immediately following the bombing, the ship altered her course, making Japan her next port of call. Several people were injured from flying steel and were given first aid by the ship's doctor. BOTTOM: Japanese Naval Officers and officials checking up on the damage done by a bomb dropped into Hongkew by a Chinese raider in which several persons lost their lives.



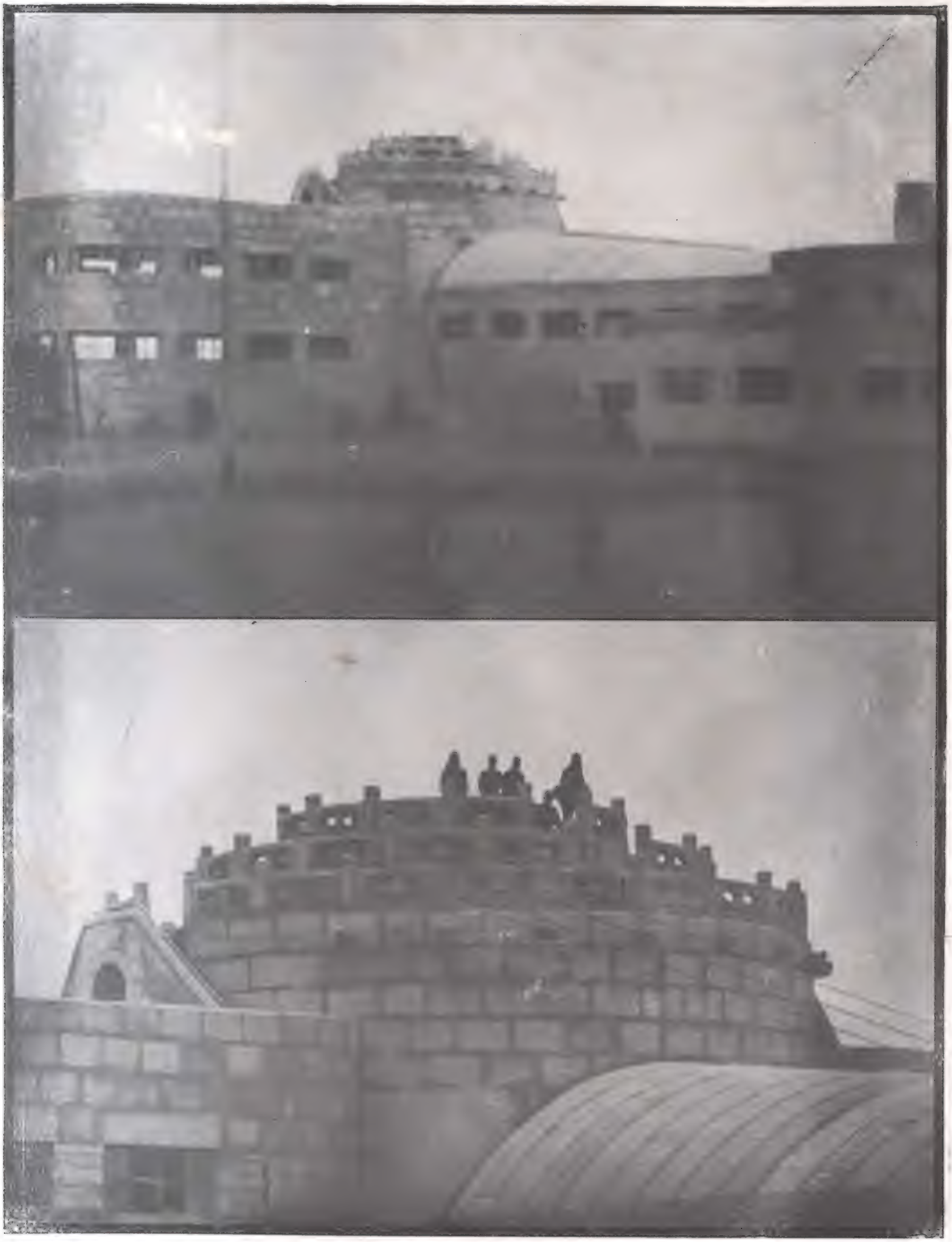
TOP: An explosion from two large size "eggs", dropped from a Japanese bomber, on the east wing of the Railway Administration Building. BOTTOM: A few seconds later, with huge billows of smoke and fire reaching skyward. The same two bombs were the ones that started the fire in the east wing which burned out the upper stories of the building.



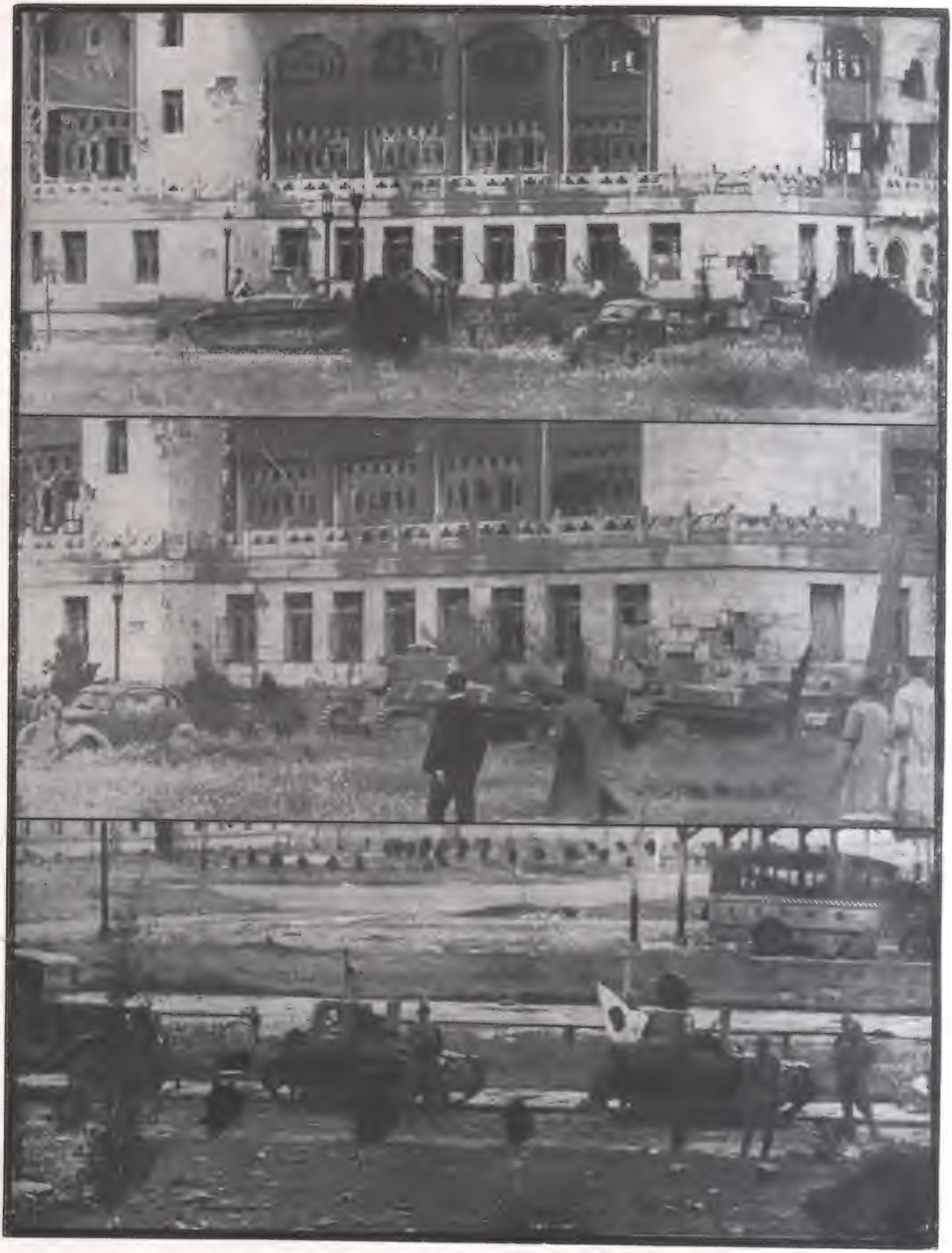
TOP: A section of Nantao ablaze following the Japanese occupation of this area on November 12. Huge conflagrations were still burning as late as November 30 and at one time a wall of fire crept dangerously close to the "Neutral Zone." BOTTOM: Chinese machinegun emplacement opposite the Far Eastern Race Course and occupied by members of the Chinese 87th Division during the hostilities around the eastern area. Well dug trenches run both right and left of the emplacement.



TOP: General view of the main Administration Building, Shanghai Civic Center, and formerly the offices of Mayor O. K Yui. Although the building has been hit by shells and burned in several sections, the structure is not beyond repair. BOTTOM: Close-up of the roof showing shell holes made from light artillery pieces of small caliber.



TOP: The aviation school, situated in the Municipality of Greater Shanghai's Civic Center. Although the building, shaped like an aeroplane, was not hit by shell-fire or bombs, it was completely gutted by fire. BOTTOM: Another view of the aviation school with Japanese infantrymen occupying its roof. These pictures were taken the day following the withdrawal of the Chinese forces from the eastern area of Shanghai.



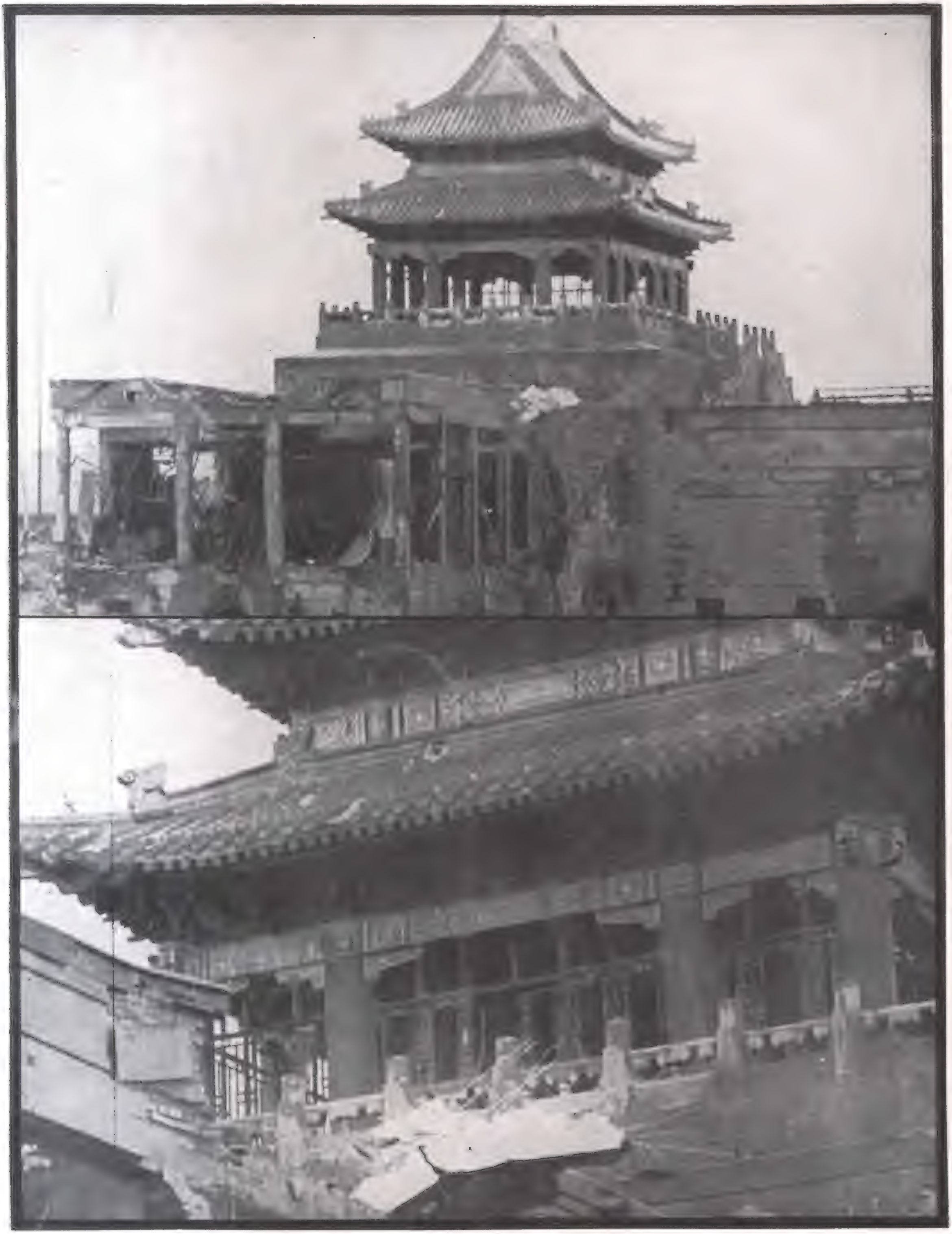
Japanese tanks were used to a great extent throughout the hostilities in the local area. The pictures on this page show both large and small tanks concentrated in the Civic Center area in front and along the side of the Administration building. These tanks are reported to have inflicted heavy damage to the Chinese defense positions in the Eastern area during the heavy fighting of September and October.



TOP: Japanese ammunition train quartered in the spacious grounds in front of the Administration Building, Shanghai Civic Center. MIDDLE: Artillery Battery covered with canvas with guns cleared for action on a Civic Center thoroughfare. Artillerymen, at the time the picture was taken, were sleeping alongside their guns. BOTTOM: Ammunition cart preparing to move forward towards Kiangwan.



TOP: Showing the damage done to the roof of the Civic Center Museum when the Japanese attacked Kiangwan. The interior of the building was a complete shambles. BOTTOM: A close-up view where several direct hits made this section of the building a mass of debris.



Top: During the fighting around Shanghai in August, September and October, the Shanghai Civic Center came under Japanese artillery fire which wrecked the Museum building beyond repair as may be seen from the picture. Bottom: Another scene of the Museum, showing the shattered windows as well as shell-hits made on the top story of the building.



With hostilities opening up in Pootung and with machinegun bullets finding their way onto Shanghai's Bund, sandbag dealers did a roaring business as sandbags were used to barricade windows and entrances, practically the whole length of the Bund. TOP: *(Left)* Chartered Bank Building at 18 the Bund. *(Right)* Ewo Building. MIDDLE: *(Left)* Palace Hotel. *(Right)* Another view of the Ewo Building. BOTTOM: *(Left)* United States Life Insurance Offices, 17 The Bund. *(Right)* Yangtse Insurance Building.

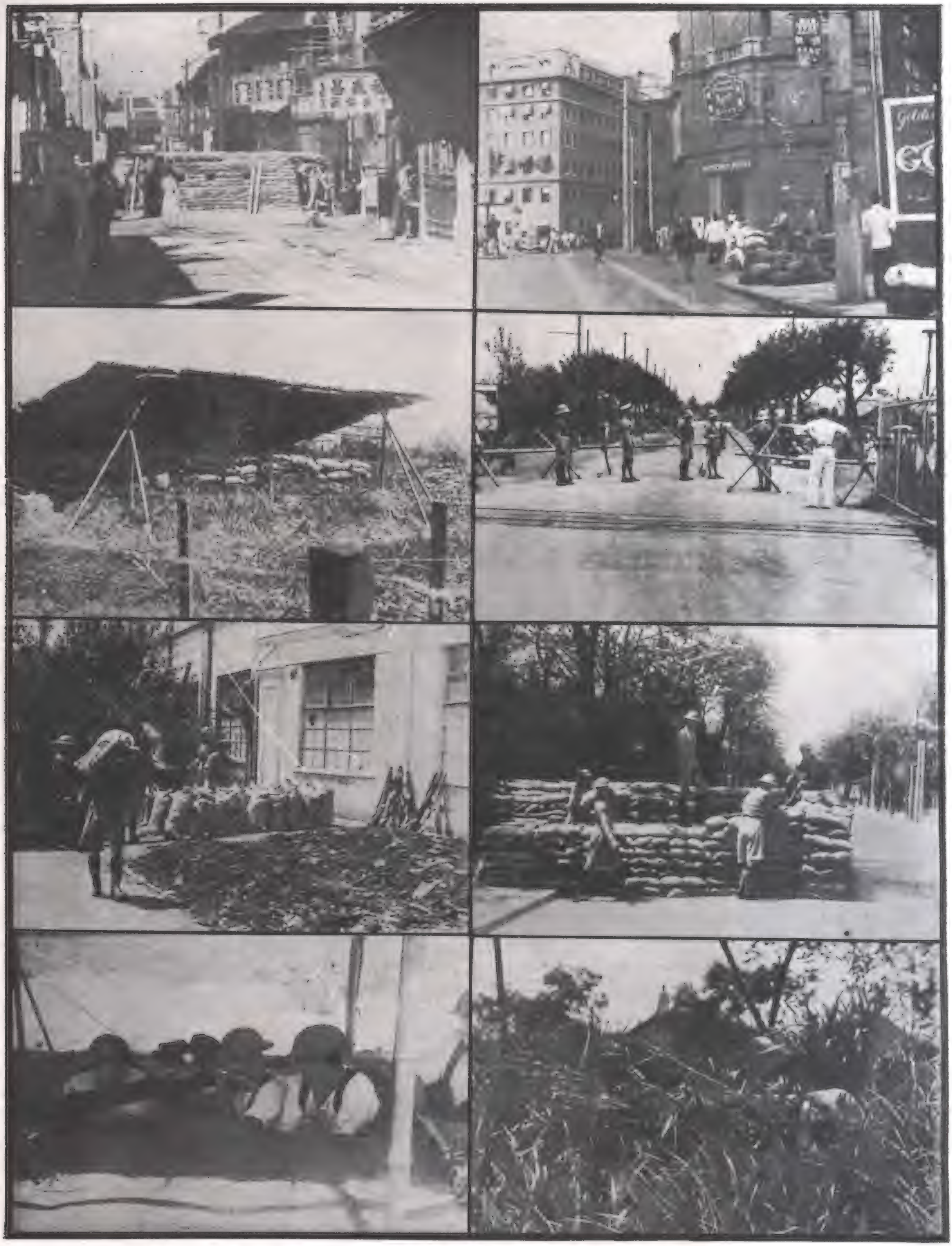


TOP: Japanese Infantrymen returning from the front lines in the Civic Center area. MIDDLE: Japanese artillerymen, together with their horses and ammunition carts quartered in buildings opposite the site of the Museum, Shanghai Civic Center. BOTTOM: Troops quartered in the Civic Center getting ready to move up to their front lines around Kiangwan by trucks.

TOP: *(Left)* Death scattered along Nanking Road at the junction of Chekiang Road following the bombing of Sincere Department Store. *(Right)* Bodies of the dead together with debris in front of the store following the bombing on August 23rd. MIDDLE: *(Left)* Members of the Shanghai Fire Brigade searching through the debris. *(Right)* Showing the hole made in the south side of the Sincere building by the bomb which was dropped from a "mystery" plane during the tiffin hour. BOTTOM: *(Left)* General view shortly after the bombing. *(Right)* PWD coolies cleaning up the wreckage which covered the sidewalks on both sides of the street. The bomb also did damage to the Wing On store on the opposite side of the street, where the full force of the concussion was felt.



On August 23rd, exactly ten days following the "Bloody Saturday" disaster, Shanghai was visited by further bombs from the air, when one hit the Sincere building at the corner of Chekiang and Nanking Roads with devastating effect to bring to Shanghai residents the horror of war from its modern implements. The wrecked frontage of the Sincere Department store is shown in the upper right picture.



TOP ROW: *(Left)* Sandbag barricade at the corner of Elgin and North Shanse Roads, West Hongkew, occupied by British troops. *(Right)* French troops behind barricade opposite the offices of the Shanghai Evening Post & Mercury and The Mercury Press, Avenue Edward VII. SECOND ROW: *(Left)* British outpost along Keswick Road. *(Right)* Barbed wire stretched across Brenan Road, Jessfield, west of the Shanghai-Hangchow-Ningpo Railway tracks. THIRD ROW: *(Left)* British "tommies" filling sandbags in the western area. *(Right)* British emplacement being erected on Keswick Road at the corner of Jessfield Road. BOTTOM: *(Left)* British machinegun outpost on Keswick Road. *(Right)* Machinegun nest occupied by British troops on Keswick Road.



TOP: *(Left)* Sandbag barricade in front of the Capitol Theater, facing the Chapoo Road Bridge and Hongkew. *(Right)* Chinese Police Constable directing traffic from a sandbag emplacement on Avenue Edward VII. MIDDLE: *(Left)* Barbed wire barricade across Szechuen Road bridge, with Chinese Post Office in the rear. *(Right)* Machinegun emplacement and "blockhouse" in west Hongkew. BOTTOM: *(Left)* Corner of Foochow Road and the Bund, with a member of the Russian Regiment on sentry duty. *(Right)* British troops manning an emplacement on Boundary Road, opposite the North Station.

TOP: *(Left)* General Beaumont, commander of the 2nd Brigade, U.S. Marines, shaking hands with Colonel Price, commander of the 4th Regiment Marines, on landing from the U.S. Transport Chaumont at the Customs Jetty. *(Right)* Colonels Clarke and Price of the 6th and 4th Regiments, U.S. Marines, together with a British Staff officer. MIDDLE: *(Left)* Members of the 6th Regiment arriving at the Customs Jetty. *(Right)* Preparing to disembark from the Transport Chaumont in which they arrived from San Diego, California. BOTTOM: *(Left)* Lined up in front of the Customs Jetty along the Shanghai Bund preparatory to moving off to their billets. *(Right)* Military trucks moving off with the new arrivals.



TOP: *(Left)* French troops landing at the French Bund, supplementing the defense forces of the French Concession. *(Right)* New arrivals pose with a smile for the cameraman. MIDDLE: *(Left)* French troops moving off to their barracks in the Concession. *(Right)* During the construction of the "Maginot Wall" along the French boundary. BOTTOM: *(Left)* French troops from Indo-China occupying an emplacement along Route de Zikawei. *(Right)* French infantryman behind a sandbag emplacement on Rue Montauban.



TOP ROW: Japanese wounded being taken care of in their base hospital situated in Hongkew. SECOND ROW: Chinese prisoners captured by the Japanese on the Shanghai front during the local hostilities. THIRD ROW: *(Left)* Following the Chinese withdrawal from the western area, French troops moved forward in their sector along Hungjao road. The picture shows a sandbag barricade at the junction of Hungjao and Columbia Roads. *(Right)* Chinese emplacement in Nantao with a tank pit in the foreground. BOTTOM: *(Left)* Wounded Chinese soldier reaching the settlement, via Yu Ya Ching Road, from the Joint Savings Society's Godown on North Soochow Road, Chapei. *(Right)* Tank pit dug by Chinese troops in Columbia Road during their occupation of the western area.



Vice Admiral Hasegawa

Domei



Vice-Admiral Le Bigot, Commanding French Asiatic Fleet

Skvirsky



Admiral Yarnell U.S.C.-in-C.

Skvirsky



The British Ambassador

Russell

NOTABILITIES



Lieut. J. A. Gardner, 2/Loyal R.. Cipher Officer.

Lieut. R. P. Young, 2/Loyal R.. Garrison Adit.

Lieut. A. B. Whatman R. Signals O.C. S'hai Signal Sec.

Lieut. F. R. N. Cobley, 2/Loyal R.. Bde Intelligence Offr.

Lieut. J. M. Calvert *R.E.*

Lieut. J. R. Cole, 2/Loyal R.. D.A.P.M.

Capt. C. E. Howard-Vyse *R. E.* O.C., R.E.

Major J. F. Benoy S. Stafford R. (D.A.A.G., China Command) Admin. Staff Offr.

Maj. General A.P.D. Telfer-Smollett, D.S.O., M.C. Area Commander.

Capt. T. G. Rennie. Black Watch, Brigade Major

Capt. F.W.C. Thomas R.A.P.C. Area Paymaster

Lieut. J.A.M., Rice-Evans, R. W. Fus (Attached to Staff)

Bann

HEADQUARTERS, SHANGHAI AREA-1937



OFFICERS OF THE

FRONT ROW *(Left to Right)*:—The Very Rev. Dean A. C. S. Trivett, M.A., D.D.,—(Senior Chaplain), Captain J. G. [illegible]—(O.C. American M. G. Company "B" Bn.). Major F. M. R. Leitao—(2nd-in-Command "B" Bn.). Major G. M. Neal—O. C. "B" Bn.), Captain C. J. Doughty—(Adjt. "B" Bn.), Major H. D. Rodger—2nd-in-Command Corps Cavalry Regt.), Major L. R. Andrews, M. C.—(O. C. Corps Cavalry Regt.).

BACK ROW *(Left to Right)*:—Captain W. C. Farnham—(O. C. American Company "B" Bn.), Lieutenant F. W. Scholbohm (Quartermaster "B" Battalion), Lieutenant J. W. Templo—(O. C. Philippine Company "B" Bn), Captain P. [illegible] Costa—(O. C. Portuguese Company "B" Bn), Captain N. F. Allman—(O. C. American Troop Corps Cavalry).



FRONT ROW *(Left to Right)*:—Major A. S. G. Douglas, O. B. E.—(Brigade Major), Colonel F. R. W. Graham, D. S. O., M. C.—(Commandant), Captain M. Manlove—(Staff Officer), Major F. A. R. Leitao—(Chief Supply Officer), Major H. Berents—Officer i/c Engineer Stores), Captain J. D. E. Shotter, A. F. C.—(O.C. Transport Company), Captain T. Otorii—(O. C. Japanese Company).

BACK ROW *(Left to Right)*:—Captain P. W. Ingmer—Liaison Officer w/French Forces.), Lt.-Colonel E. H. McMichael—(Liaison Officer w/British Forces.), Captain F. J. W. Focken—(Superintendent of Weapon Training.), Lieutenant H. P. Krogh—(2nd-in-Command "A" Company "A" Bn.), Captain P. H. Barton—(O. C. "B" Company "A" Bn), Captain T. W. R. Wilson—(O. C. Shanghai Scottish Company "A" Bn.).



SHANGHAI VOLUNTEER CORPS

FRONT ROW (*Left to Right*):—Captain W. R. McBain, A. F. C., M. C.—(Adjt. Corps Cavalry Regt.), Captain Z. Y. Chow O. C. (Chinese & Interpreter Companies), Captain D. W. Leach—(O. C. Armoured Car Company), Captain A. C. Brennan-Craddock—(O. C. Shanghai Field Company), Major H. S. Bartley—(Senior Intelligence Officer), Major T. A. Zee—(Orderly Officer), Major E. G. Gauntlett, C.B.E., D.S.O.—(Senior Medical Officer).

BACK ROW (*Left to Right*):—Captain H. Maitland—(O. C. Shanghai Light Horse Corps Cavalry), Captain U. F. Beichmann—(O.C. "C" M.G. Company.), Captain G. R. Harrison—(2nd-in-Command Shanghai Field Company), Lieutenant H. H. Cohen—(Corps Recruiting Officer), Captain J. D. Watt—(Chief Billeting Officer), Captain W. Miles—(2nd-in-Command Signals Company).



FRONT ROW:—*Reading From Left to Right*:—Major E. S. Barraclough. M.C.—(O. C. "A" Battalion), Captain C. C. Todd—Major E. V. Burke-Murphy, M.C.—(Advisor "C" Battalion, Major S. D. Ivanoff—O. C. "C" Battalion), Captain N. M. Stepanischef—(2nd-in-Command "C" Battalion), The Rev. Father R. Jacquinot—(Senior Chaplain R.C.).

BACK ROW:—*Reading from Left to Right*:—2nd/Lieutenant W. Goldenberg—2nd-in-Command Jewish Cuy "A" Bn.), Captain E. A. R. Fowles, A.F.C.—(O. C. Air Defence Company), Captain P.K. Poronnik—(O.C. No. 4 Company "C" Battalion), Captain C. P. Saveloff—(O. C. No. 3 (Vol) Coy "C" Battalion), Captain A. A. Vassillieff—(O. C. No. 2 Company "B" Battalion), Captain I. S. Lobanoff—(O. C. No. 1 Company "C" Battalion.)

Ah Fong



OFFICERS OF THE ROYAL WELCH FUSILIERS, 2ND BATTALION

BACK ROW (*Left to Right*):—Lt. F. C. Minshull-Ford, Lt. H.A.S. Clarke, Lt. J.A.M. Rice-Evans, Lt. W.S.A. Clough-Taylor, 2/Lt. R. L. Boyle, Lt. & Q.M. C. Jones, D.C.M. M.M.

FRONT ROW (*Left to Right*):—Capt. Hon. G. R. Clegg-Hill, Capt. Ll. Gwydyr-Jones, Major H. B. Harrison, M.C., Lt. Col. D. M. Barchard, Lt. & Adjt. T. A. G. Pritchard, Capt. E. R. Freeman. *M.P.*



A NETHERLANDS WARSHIP

Officers of the Destroyer "VAN GALEN." *Skvirsky*



ITALIAN TROOPS

Group of Officers of the Grenadiers of Savoy



A Platoon of Grenadiers of Savoy with Fascist Emblem



OFFICERS OF THE U.S. MARINE CORPS

SITTING (*Left to right*):—Major Joseph T. Smith, Lieut.-Colonel Harry Schmidt, Brig. Gen. John C. Beaumo[illegible] Comdg. 2d Brigade of Marines, Lieut.-Colonel Frank Whitehead, Brigade Quartermaster, Major George A. Hall. STANDING (*Left to right*).—Captain William F. Coleman, Captain Ronald A. Boone, Major William F. Brown, Major Albert W. Paul, Major George D. Hamilton, Captain Glenn E. Hayes, 1st Lieut. Harvey C. Tschirgi.

Skvirsky



FRONT ROW (*Left to right*):—Major Howard N. Stent, Lieut.-Colonel William H. Rupertus, (Commanding 1st Bn.) Colonel Chas. F. B. Price, (Regimental Commander); Lieut.-Colonel Roswell Winans, (Commanding 2nd Bn.); Commander Virgil H. Carson, (MC) U.S.N. SECOND ROW (*Left to right*):—Captain Ronald A. Boone, Major Leland S. Swindler, Lieut.-Colonel Harold C. Pierce, Major Merritt A. Edson, Captain Wallace M. Greene, Jr. THIRD ROW (*Left to right*):—Major Martin J. Kelleher, First Lieut. Victor H. Krulak, Captain Robert E. Hogaboom, Major Blythe G. Jones. BACK ROW (*Left to right*):—Captain Maxwell H. Mizell, Major Ralph E. West, Lieutenant Frank R. Hamilton, Major Paul A. Lesser, and Captain Howard R. Huff.

M.P.



OFFICERS OF THE LOYAL REGIMENT

TOP ROW (*Left to Right*):—Lieut. F. K. Beattie, Lieut. P. H. Rogers, Lieut. J. F. Whiteing M.C., Lieut. R. A. Pulliblank, Lieut. E. H. Lechallas, Lieut. F. G. Barnes, Lieut. W. P. Crow.

CONTRE ROW (*Left to Right*):—Lieut. T. R. Brook, Lieut. R. H. Birley, Lieut. R. B. Prince, Lieut. C. J. Smith, Lieut. J. R. Cole, Lieut. R. P. Young, Lieut. J. A. Gardner, Lieut. H. D. Oclee.

FRONT ROW (*Seated, Left to Right*):—Captain F. L. Eccles, Captain B. O. Ware, Major J. Lindsell M.C., Ltd. Colonel J. E. Hume D.S.O., Captain H. K. Watkins, Captain J. G. Sandie M.C., Lieut. W. J. Holohan.

Skvirsky



OFFICERS OF THE 1ST BATTALION, ROYAL ULSTER RIFLES

FRONT ROW (*Left to Right*):—Capt. I. H. Good, Capt. O. Swinburne, Capt. R. J. R. Campbell, Major H. Mc L. Morrison, M.C., Col . F. R. W. Graham, D.S.O., M.C., Lt. R. M. Rodwell, Lt. I. C. Harris, Major E. G. Burke-Murphy, M. C., Capt. G. H. K. Ryland, Capt. R. F. G. Crookshank, Capt. J. Jeffreys.

BACK ROW (*Left to Right*):—Lt. T. B. H. Otway, Lt. B. J. Fitz, G. Renlea, Lt. G. D. Going, Lt. P. J. Ashton, Lt. C. G. H. B. Blake, Lt. D. C. Lincoln, 2/Lt. M. D. G. C. Ryan.

Skvirsky



THE FRENCH GARRISON

Skvirsky

Colonel Perretier (Centre) Commanding the French Forces, and his Officers.



FRENCH SPECIALS

Skvirsky

Seated in the Centre is M. Baudez, French Consul-General. On his right, Commandant Fabre of the French Police, and next to him Chief Inspector Coquelet. Former Chief Inspector Sheridan is on M. Baudez's left, and next to him, in mufti, M. R. Jobez, Directeur-adjoint.



THE U.S. FLAGSHIP

Skvirsky

Officers of the U.S.S. "AUGUSTA."



ON THE BRITISH FLAGSHIP

Skvirsky

Admiral Sir Charles Little, Staff and Officers of H.M.S. "CUMBERLAND"



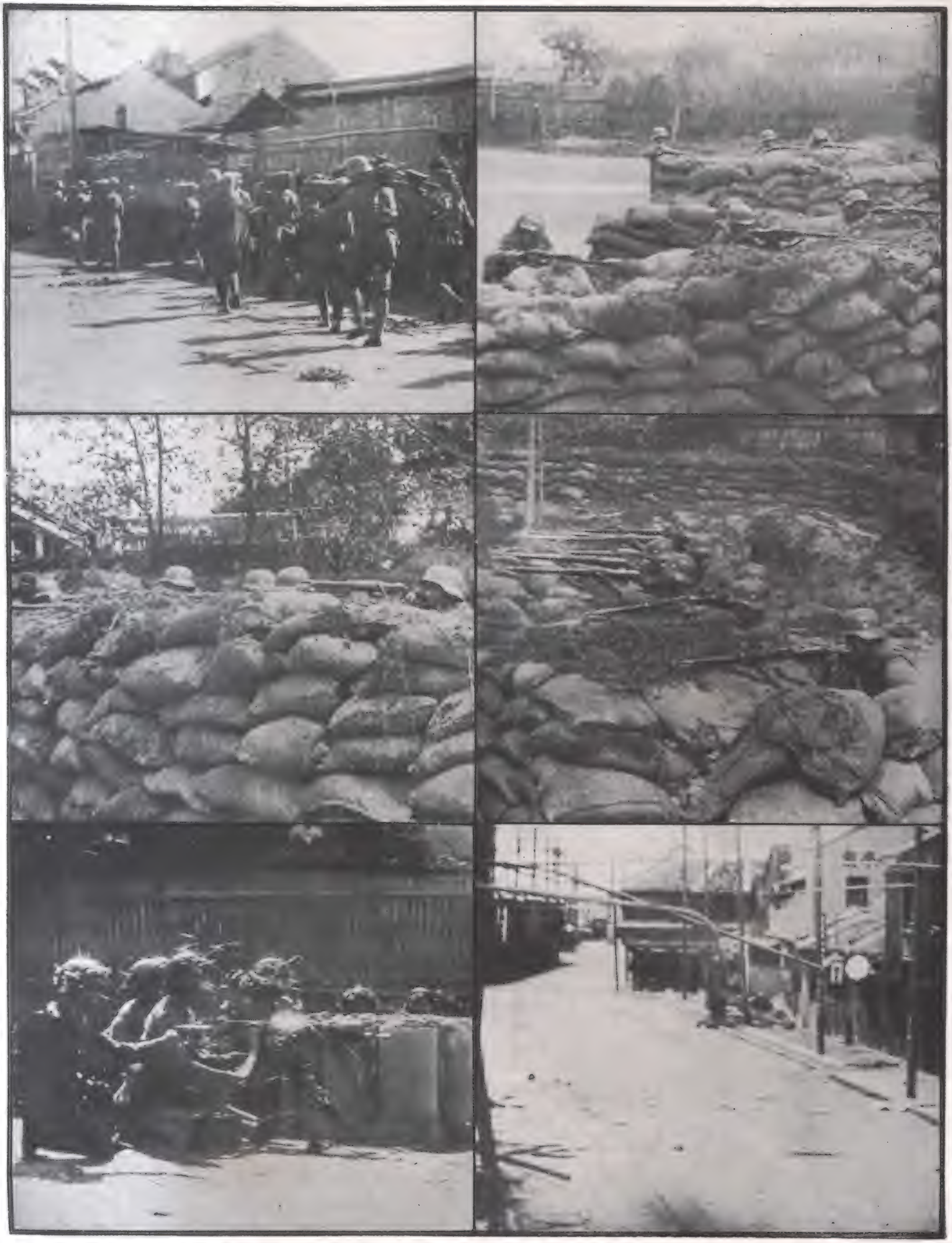
TOP: (*Left*) Chinese commander of the 88th division. (*Middle*) Members of the 88th Division behind a barricade "somewhere" in Chapei. (*Right*) Unexploded Japanese bomb picked up at Tazang. MIDDLE: (*Left*) Members of the 88th Division in Chapei. (*Right*) 88th Division infantrymen on the alert "somewhere" in Chapei. BOTTOM: (*Left*) On the alert in Chapei. (*Middle*) Chinese Girl Scout who smuggled the Chinese flag into the "doomed Battalion" who were holding out after the Chinese withdrawal from Chapei, in the Joint Savings Society's Godown on Soochow Creek. (*Right*) Chinese soldier undergoing training in the western area.



During the eerly days of hostilities around the Shanghai area, Chapei came in for routine bombing from Japanese naval and military planes. The pictures shown on this page depict several of the fires started in Chapei, following numerous raids over the area, held by the Chinese 88th Division. In the middle row the picture on the right shows a huge inferno in the Yangtsepoo area close to the Shanghai Gas Co's plant. This plant shut down during the early days of the hostilities, recommencing their supply following the withdrawal of Chinese troops from the eastern area.



Following the withdrawal of the Chinese 88th Division from Chapei to the western district, this area became an objective for Japanese planes. TOP: Dense black cloud rolling skyward is from the Toyoda Cotton Mill, situated on Brenan Road and occupied by Chinese troops. The white cloud is from a bomb explosion. BOTTOM: On November 9th when the Chinese troops withdrew from the western area, Japanese planes were very active strafing and bombing. The picture shows a cloud effect following the dropping of twelve bombs simultaneously from six large type monoplanes along Chungshan Road, close to Lungwha.



TOP: (*Left*) Chinese troops moving up into position at Chapoo. (*Right*) Chinese emplacement along Chungshan Road in the western area of Shanghai. MIDDLE: (*Left*) and (*Right*) Chinese troops behind emplacements in the Lotien area, which was the scene of fierce fighting during the early part of the hostilities. BOTTOM: (*Left*) Chinese machinegunners located in Chapoo, a village on the Shanghai-Hangchow highway. (*Right*) Street scene in Chapei, last September, when fighting was at its height.



TOP: (*Left*) Japanese aviator being questioned by Officers of the Chinese Air Force at Nanking. (*Right*) Body of Japanese aviator killed in a crash at Nanking. MIDDLE and BOTTOM: Bodies of victims of air raids over the Nanking area during the month of September.



TOP ROW: (*Left*) Mao Yin-chu and Huang Kwang-han who each claim one Japanese bomber in the Hangchow area. MIDDLE: Loh Ih-chin of the Chinese air force who claims four Japanese planes. (*Right*) Engine of Japanese bomber brought down at Nanking. MIDDLE ROW: (*Left*) Japanese bomber brought down by Chinese anti-aircraft fire while bombing the Hsiakwan Power Station. (*Right*) Wreckage of Japanese plane brought down in Nanking, September 25th. BOTTOM: (*Left*) Remains of a Japanese plane brought down in the Hangchow area. (*Right*) Salvaged equipment from a Japanese plane brought down at Nanking.



TOP: (*Left*) Police car followed by Omnibuses with prisoners from the Ward Road Jail who were the first and last batch to be liberated as the Japanese authorities called a halt to the evacuation after it was learned that the greater majority of the prisoners were being freed in Chinese territory. (*Right*) Omnibus with a few of the lucky ones. MIDDLE and BOTTOM: Scenes showing the destruction done to the Ward Road Jail from shell fire in which several of the inmates lost their lives, although every precaution was used to protect them.



MODERN SHANGHAI. TOP LEFT: Sassoon House which houses the Cathay Hotel, bombed on August 14th by Chinese planes. The new building of the Bank of China in process of construction stands next to it covered with bamboo scaffolding. TOP RIGHT: The Sun Sun Co. Department Store tower reaching skyward along Nanking Road, Shanghai's "Great White Way." BOTTOM LEFT: Grosvenor House, Rue Cardinal Mercier, French Concession. BOTTOM RIGHT: Another imposing structure, the new Chase Bank Building.



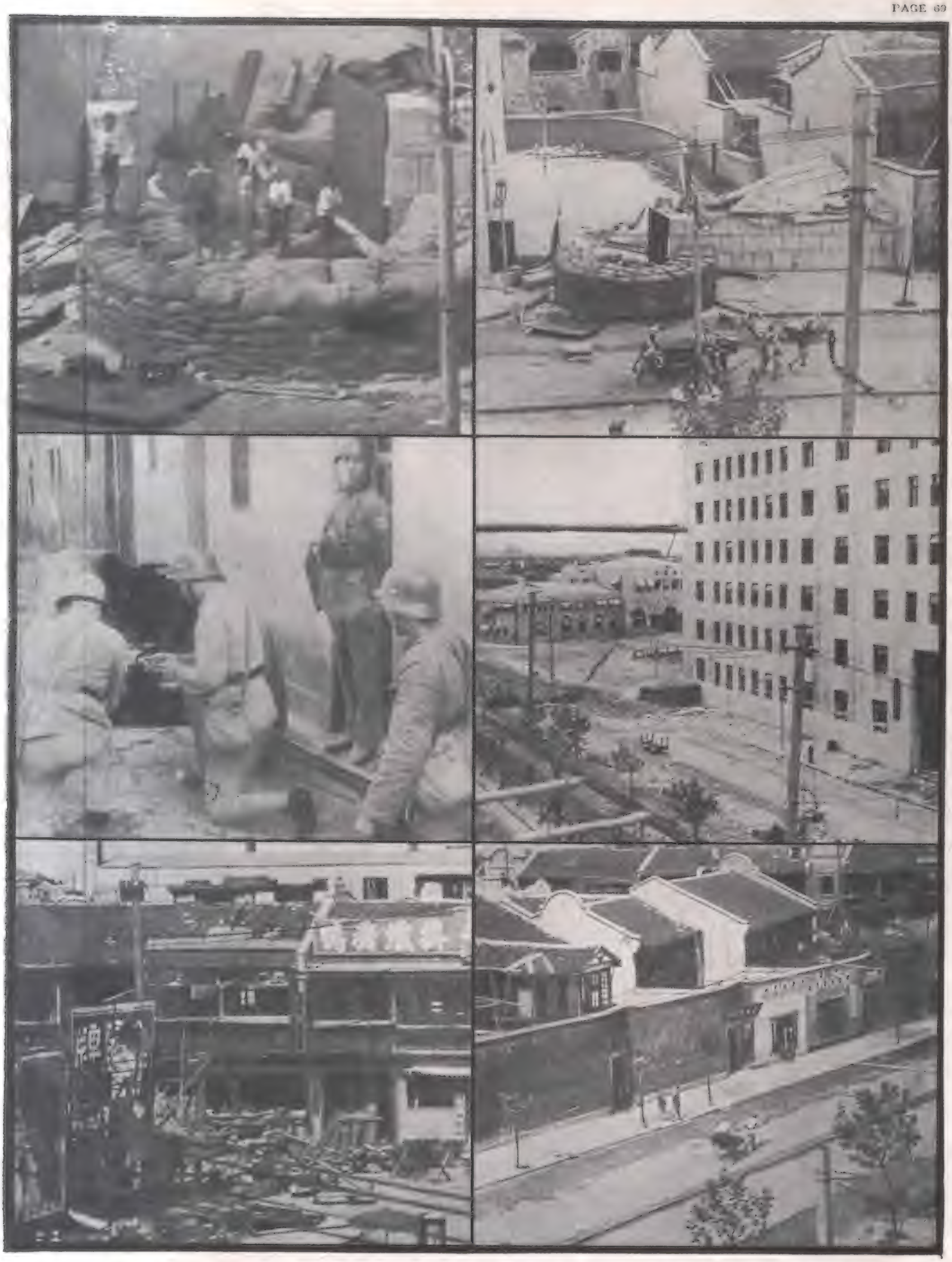
TOP: (*Left*) Shell hits from a Chinese battery situated in Pootung on the Japanese Consulate and NYK Wharf. (*Right*) Another shell hit from the same battery on the NYK Wharf. MIDDLE: (*Left*) Chinese shrapnel burst over the NYK godowns alongside the Japanese Consulate. (*Right*) *H.I.J.M.S. Idzumo*, anchored in midstream off Pootung Point, threw shell after shell into Pootung in reply to the Chinese batteries. BOTTOM: (*Left*) Chinese shell falling into the Whangpoo River, just short of a Japanese destroyer tied up at the NYK Mail Wharf. (*Right*) The same destroyer moving away from the Wharf during the shelling, to finally anchor in midstream at the fore of the *Idzumo*.



TOP: (*Left*) Pootung Point, the scene of many clashes between Chinese and Japanese troops during the local hostilities. (*Right*) Following heavy Chinese fire from a machinegun post situated "somewhere along the Point," Japanese Naval guns threw shell after shell into the area, to commence a fire in the China Merchants' Engineering Works. MIDDLE: (*Left*) The Pootung Point fire well under way. (*Right*) Flames make further headway into the Point" area to eventually burn out a wide section of the waterfront. BOTTOM: (*Left*) Shell hits from Japanese Naval guns into the Pootung hinterland. (*Right*) Bomb explosion in Pootung with the French cruiser *Lamotte Picquet* in the foreground, anchored on the Pootung side of the Whangpoo.



TOP: (*Left*) Chinese gun emplacement in Pootung. (*Right*) Another Chinese field piece in the same area. It was these guns together with several others in the same area that harassed Japanese positions in Hongkew and Yangtsepoo as well as Japanese men-of-war anchored in the Whangpoo. MIDDLE: (*Left*) Chinese dugout just outside of Miaohungchen west of the Kiangwan Race Course. (*Right*) Chinese field piece going into action from Pootung. BOTTOM: (*Left*) Officers of the Chinese 87th Division taken "somewhere" along the Kiangwan front. (*Right*) Civilian dugouts in Pootung across the river from Nantao.



TOP: (*Left*) Chinese members of the 88th Division building a sandbag barricade to the right of the Administration Building. (*Right*) Chinese troops carrying lumber up to their lines along the Shanghai-Woosung Railway line from the North Station area. MIDDLE: (*Left*) Chinese light field piece located in the North Station area. (*Right*) General view of the North Station and Administration Building, Chapei, after two months of warfare. BOTTOM: (*Left*) Barricade across Paoshan Road, Chapei at the corner of Sang Ming Road. Just to the rear of the large billboard is a concrete "pillbox." (*Right*) Chinese soldier carrying supplies to the front lines in Chapei by ricksha.



TOP: (*Left*) and (*Right*) Chinese wounded soldiers being cared for in the "Lido," one of Shanghai's famous night clubs which was turned into a hospital. MIDDLE: (*Left*) Two wounded Chinese soldiers observing the doings on Rue Montauban, French Concession. (*Right*) More Chinese wounded soldiers confined to the "Lido" for treatment. BOTTOM: (*Left*) Chinese society leaders making bandages for the "Lido" hospital. (*Right*) Chinese lady making white shorts for the wounded.



A few days before the general withdrawal of the Chinese forces from the Chapei area, Japan army and navy bombers commenced a terrific bombardment of the Chinese positions just north of Soochow Creek, one of the Army bombers letting loose a bomb that dropped on Sinza Road. The damage done may be seen from the pictures above. Dead bodies of Chinese civilians lying on the roadway as well as the wrecked tram-car speak for themselves.



TOP: (*Left*) Men of the Japanese Medical Corps, treating wounded Chinese soldiers at Paoshan. (*Right*) Group of captured Chinese Infantrymen with their guard at Paoshan. MIDDLE: (*Left*) Members of the Japanese Naval Landing Party take time out in the Yangtsepoo area to play with a dog and its brood. (*Right*) Peaceful scene, but with fighting just a short distance away. BOTTOM: (*Left*) Japanese Infantrymen loading their cart with eatables from Hongkew Market. (*Right*) Rice being issued out to Chinese refugees in the Yangtsepoo area.



TOP: *(Left)* Chinese volunteers undergoing tra... ...g the western part of Shanghai. *(Right)* Members of the 88th Division in position along the Chapei front. MIDDLE: *(Left)* Japanese troops in Chapei following the Chinese withdrawal just over Soochow Creek from the Settlement. *(Right)* Chinese machinegun crew "somewhere" along the Kiangwan front. BOTTOM: *(Left)* A corner of deserted Chapei. *(Middle)* Member of the Chinese Peace Preservation Corps directing traffic at the corner of Paoshan and Yen Ka Koh Roads, Chapei, August 12. *(Right)* Chinese outpost, west of the North Station Administration building along Sing Ming Road.



TOP: *(Left)* Japanese members of the Naval Landing Party inspecting a Chinese incendiary bomb, dropped in Woosung Road, Hongkew, by Chinese raiders during September. *(Right)* Japanese naval units entering Chapei in an attack on a Chinese position. MIDDLE: *(Left)* and *(Right)* Japanese Infantrymen operating over the Lotien area. BOTTOM: *(Left)* Japanese troops on the move near Woosung. *(Right)* Japanese supply train moving up to their front lines from Jukong wharf.



TOP: *(Left)* Sandbag emplacement and barbed wire barricade in one of the thriving streets of Nantao. *(Right)* Chinese machinegun nest along the Nantao Bund. It was here that the Chinese made their last stand in the Shanghai area, November 12. MIDDLE: *(Left)* With the Japanese pushing into Nantao on November 12th, refugees from this area swarmed around the gates to the French Concession in the hope of gaining an entrance to the Concession and safety. *(Right)* Tank trench, filled with water, in Nantao, just over the line from the French Concession. BOTTOM: *(Left)* Chinese emplacement along the Nantao Bund. *(Right)* Members of the Nantao Police Force who finally withdrew into the French Concession on November 12.



TOP: *(Left)* Japanese Infantrymen shouting "Banzai" following the capture of the Civic Centre, seat of the government for the Municipality of Greater Shanghai. *(Right)* Japanese troops at Paoshan after its capture, together with Chinese flag captured during their operations. CENTER: *(Left)* Members of the Japanese Naval Landing Party entering further into Chapei during the heavy fighting last September. *(Right)* Japanese Infantrymen in Paoshan. BOTTOM: Japanese Infantrymen on the march up to the front lines from their Woosung base.



TOP: *(Left)* Tazang Memorial arch with bombed buses in the foreground. *(Right)* More wreckage at the entrance to Tazang, a village which felt the full force of the fighting. MIDDLE: *(Left)* Results of a direct hit from a Japanese aerial bomb on the Chenju wireless station offices. *(Right)* Shell hole made in the wall of a dwelling house on Cunningham Road, West Hongkew. BOTTOM: *(Left)* Dead cattle belonging to the Poplar Grove Farm, situated near Chenju, following the bombing of the farm. *(Right)* Japanese troops landing from a transport "somewhere along the Whangpoo," between Jukong Wharf and Woosung.



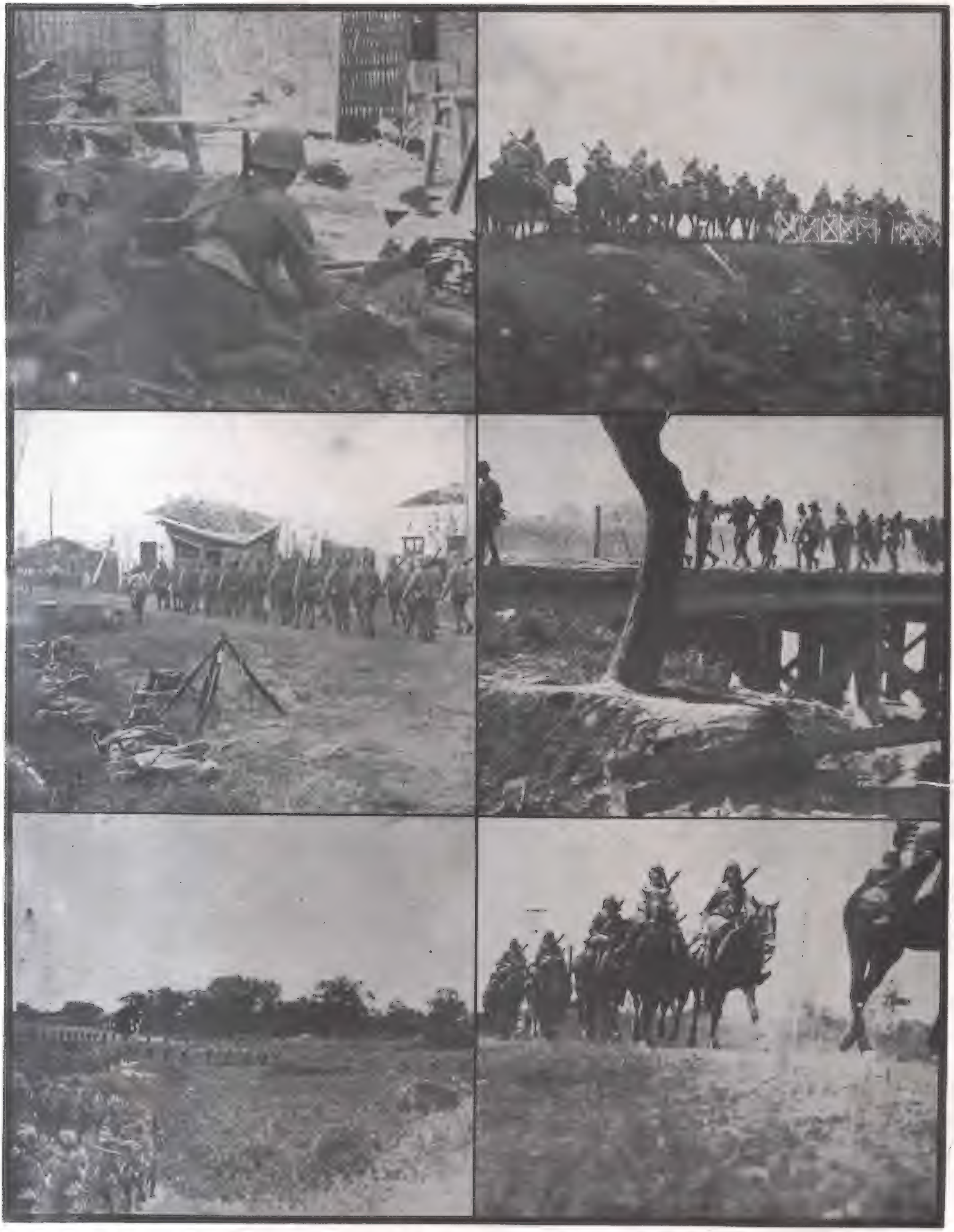
TOP ROW: Two scenes during the funeral possession on Bubbling Well Road when bodies of the British Fusiliers, killed in line of duty from shell fire, were laid to rest in the Bubbling Well Cemetery. MIDDLE ROW: *(Left)* Japanese outpost at dusk in the Kiangwan area. *(Middle)* Vice-Admiral Hasegawa aboard his flagship, *H.I.J.M.S.* Idzumo, anchored in the Whangpoo, observing a section of Pootung. *(Right)* Wounded Chinese soldier being brought into the Settlement from the western area. BOTTOM: *(Left)* Sandbag emplacement in Nantao, opposite Rue Montauban. *(Right)* Downed Japanese plane besides the U.S. Destroyer 218, berthed alongside the Texas Company's installations, Pootung.



TOP: *(Left)* Japanese infantrymen outside their dugout somewhere near Paoshan. *(Right)* Troops landing from a barge along the Whangpoo river near Jukong Wharf. MIDDLE: *(Left)* Japanese troops erecting an emplacement at W·osung. *(Right)* Japanese field piece in the Eastern district. BOTTOM: *(Left)* Japanese infantrymen wading the muddy Whangpoo to gain a shore landing. *(Right)* Japanese heavy field piece.



TOP: Japanese cabinet in full assembly, shortly after the opening of hostilities in the Shanghai area. MIDDLE: *(Left)* Radio equipment taken from a downed Japanese plane. *(Right)* With the general withdrawal of Chinese troops from the Shanghai area, sandbag barricades began to disappear from Shanghai's Bund. BOTTOM: *(Left)* Girl members of the Chinese Citizen's training Corps undergoing rigid training in the western area. *(Right)* Girl members of the C.C.T.C. received rifle training and were used at times behind the Chinese lines in the different war areas as special police.



TOP: *(Left)* Japanese infantrymen in action outside Pacshan. *(Right)* Japanese cavalry moving up to the front from Woosung. MIDDLE: *(Left)* Japanese troops moving up to their lines after landing off Woosung *(Right)* Japanese infantrymen carrying back their wounded from the front lines near Woosung. BOTTOM: *(Left)* Japanese troops moving up in single file from the Wentsaopang area. *(Right)* Japanese cavalry on the march.



TOP: *(Left)* Joint Savings Society's Godown in which the so-called Chinese "Doomed Battalion" made their last stand in Chapei. *(Right)* Fire raging in Chapei opposite U.S. Marine outpost along Soochow Creek. MIDDLE: *(Left)* Fires gaining headway following the withdrawal of the Chinese 88th Division from Chapei. *(Right)* Japanese troops in Chapei following up Chinese troops after their withdrawal from the Chapei area along Soochow Creek. BOTTOM: *(Left)* Japanese aviators receiving instructions as to the day's bombing activities. *(Right)* Japanese aviators studying their objectives before taking to the air.



TOP: *(Left)* Street scene in Hangchow during an air-raid alarm. *(Right)* Poster in Hangchow showing what happens to a city not defended with anti-aircraft guns. MIDDLE: *(Left)* Anti-Japanese poster displayed in Nanchang, Kiangsi, showing a Chinese family being decimated by a Japanese soldier. *(Right)* Map of the Shanghai war area displayed at Nanchang to enable the populace to follow the war in and around Shanghai. BOTTOM: *(Left)* Bombed building at Nanchang. *(Right)* Bomb-proof dugout in one of the main streets of Nanchang.



TOP: *(Left)* Camouflaged bridge on the Hangchow-Hweichow Highway. *(Right)* Burnt out bridge on the Tunki-Nanchang highway. Second Row: More camouflaged bridges along the Hangchow-Hweichow highway. Third Row: *(Left)* Runway and supply base, somewhere along the Tunki-Nanchang highway. *(Right)* Freight cars being ferried up-river from Poyang Lake BOTTOM: *(Left)* Excavation work under way along a section of the Tunki-Nanchang highway to facilitate transportation across one of the three rivers crossing the highway. *(Right)* Temporary bridge spanning a creek along the Tunki-Nanchang highway.



TOP: *(Left)* The Italian salute, at the War Memorial on their Armistice Day. *(Right)* Italian Grenadiers parading at the Race Course, November 4. MIDDLE: *(Left)* The Italian Ambassador taking the salute at the Race Course. *(Right)* North Szechuen Road on August 13, the day hostilities opened. BOTTOM: *(Left)* On August 13, following the opening of hostilities, Chinese refugees made a mad rush along Brenan Road in the hope of gaining admission to the Settlement. *(Right)* Showing the burnt top of the entrance to Tung Wen University, Hungjao Road.



TOP: *(Left)* Two officers of the Chinese 88th Division alongside the battered Administration Building, Chapei. *(Right)* Chinese dugout in the North Station area, Chapei. MIDDLE: *(Left)* Newspaper correspondents making a tour of Chapei with members of the 88th Division. *(Right)* Showing shell holes made into the north side of the Administration Building. BOTTOM: *(Left)* Chinese troops entrenched in the North Station sector, Chapei. *(Right)* Chinese machinegun nest "somewhere" along the Chapei front.



TOP: *(Left)* Winter jackets being issued to members of the Chinese 88th Division in Chapei before their retirement. *(Right)* Chinese dugout somewhere in Chapei with members of the 88th Division on the alert. MIDDLE: *(Left)* Chewing gum being issued to members of the 88th Division on their withdrawal from Chapei, October 26th. *(Right)* Officer of the 88th Division filling in reports following a tour of the Chinese positions. BOTTOM: *(Left)* Deserted Paoshan Road, Chapei. *(Right)* Burnt out building in Chapei, used by Chinese troops in their defenses.



TOP: During the early part of the hostilities no great attempt was made to bomb the Administration Building along Boundary Road, Chapei. The picture shows the result of a direct hit on the east wing by an incendiary bomb which caused a huge fire in the upper floors. BOTTOM: The building, immediately following its taking over by the Japanese after the Chinese withdrawal. In the early hours of the morning, October 27th, the Japanese hoisted the Rising Sun flag atop one of the radio masts, both of which withstood the bombings and intensive shelling during its occupation by the Chinese.



Two scenes showing the huge conflagration in Chapei the day following the withdrawal of the Chinese 88th Division to new positions along the Soochow Creek and west of the International Settlement. For twenty-four hours huge billows of smoke shot skyward from the largest fire Shanghai residents have ever had the opportunity to witness.



Further scenes of the burning of Chapei. The picture at the top of the page shows the fire raging in the Markham Road Railway Yard sector. The bottom picture also shows the intensity of the several fires from the Joint Savings Society's godown where the "Doomed Battalion" of the 88th Division made their four day stand—on Soochow Creek.



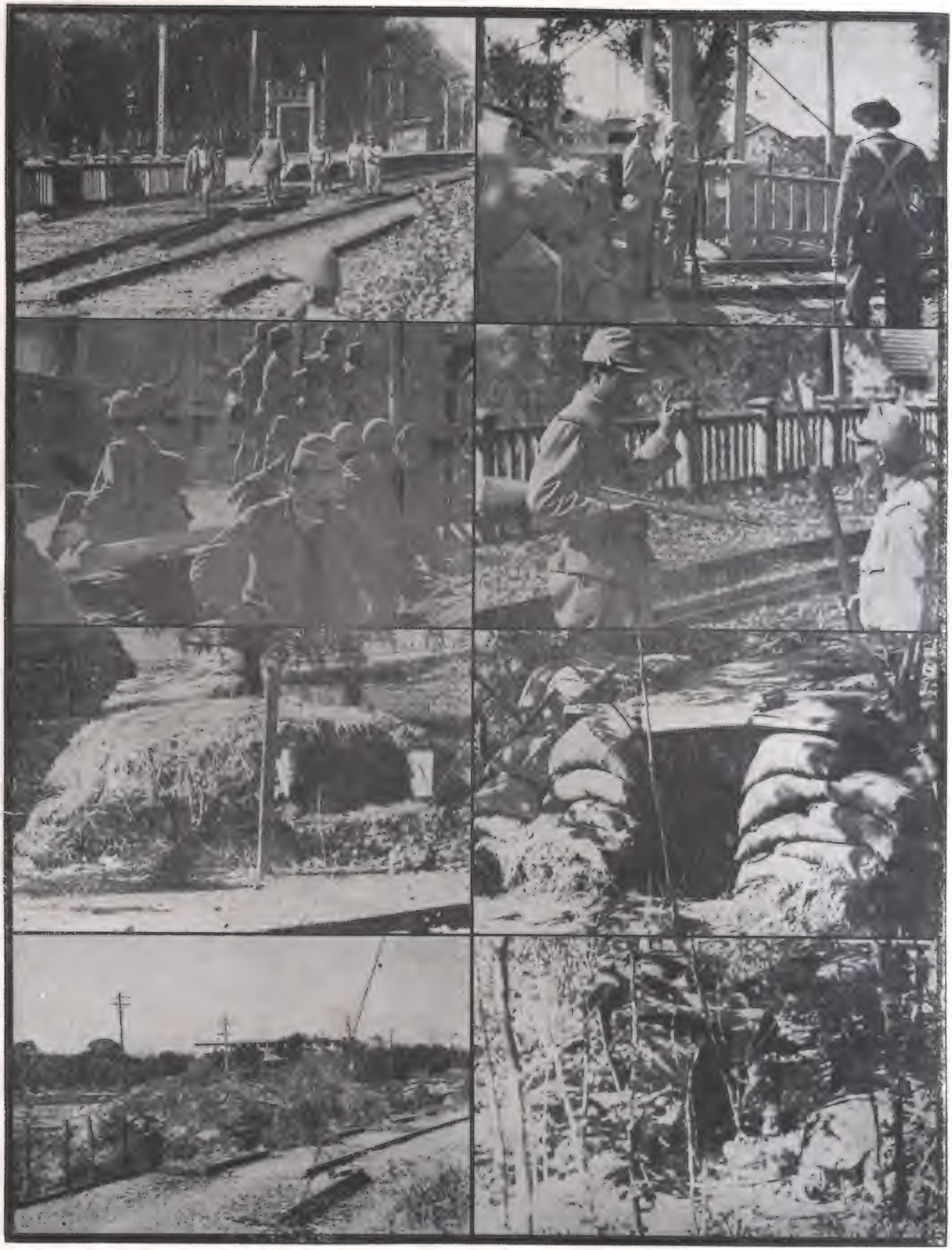
TOP: The burning of Chapei well under way. MIDDLE: *(Left)* Another scene of the burning of Chapei taken from West Soochow Road opposite the Markham railway yards. *(Right)* Fire just off Yu Ya Ching Road in Chapei. BOTTOM: *(Left)* Another residence goes up in flames along the Soochow Creek. *(Right)* The huge conflagration emitted volumes of smoke skyward during the worst holocaust Shanghai residents have ever seen.



Two scenes of the burning of Chapei by night taken on the evening of October 27th following the general withdrawal of the Chinese troops of the 88th Division from this area during the evening of October 26th. The picture at the top shows the Sinza water tower, Medhurst and Denis apartment buildings silhouetted against the sky-line. The fire was one raging mass of flame along Soochow Creek extending from the Joint Savings Society Godown.....where the "Doomed Battalion" of the 88th Division made their stand.....to the Chinese National Government's Central Mint, just opposite from the U.B. Brewery on the Settlement side of the creek.



TOP ROW: *(Left)* Wounded Chinese soldiers at Fengliangchao, awaiting transportation inland, following the Chinese withdrawal from the western area. *(Right)* Chinese troops retreating eastward following their withdrawal from the Hungjao district. SECOND ROW: *(Left)* and *(Right)* Chinese wounded soldiers at the Fengliangchao hospital off Route Ghisi awaiting transportation. THIRD ROW: *(Left)* and *(Right)* During the withdrawal from the western area by Chinese troops, thousands of refugees from the country bordering the French Concession wandered along Avenue Haig waiting a chance to enter the Concession. BOTTOM: *(Left)* Chinese refugees with all their belongings parked on the banks of Siccawei Creek on the borders of the French Concession. *(Right)* French outpost at the corners of Avenue Haig, Avenue Petain and Route de Zikawei.



TOP: *(Left)* Japanese troops in possession of Jessfield Station, following the Chinese withdrawal on November 9. *(Right)* Japanese outpost on Brenan Road where the Shanghai-Hangchow-Ningpo Railway line crosses the roadway. SECOND ROW: *(Left)* Japanese infantrymen resting along the railway tracks at the corner of Jessfield and Keswick roads. *(Right)* Sentry at Jessfield Station receiving his orders. THIRD ROW: *(Left)* Chinese machinegun emplacement at the corner of Great Western and Keswick roads. *(Right)* Chinese dugout on Jessfield road, east of the railway line. BOTTOM ROW: *(Left)* Chinese emplacements along the Shanghai-Hangchow-Ningpo Railway line running parallel to Keswick road. *(Right)* Chinese dugout at Jessfield Station.



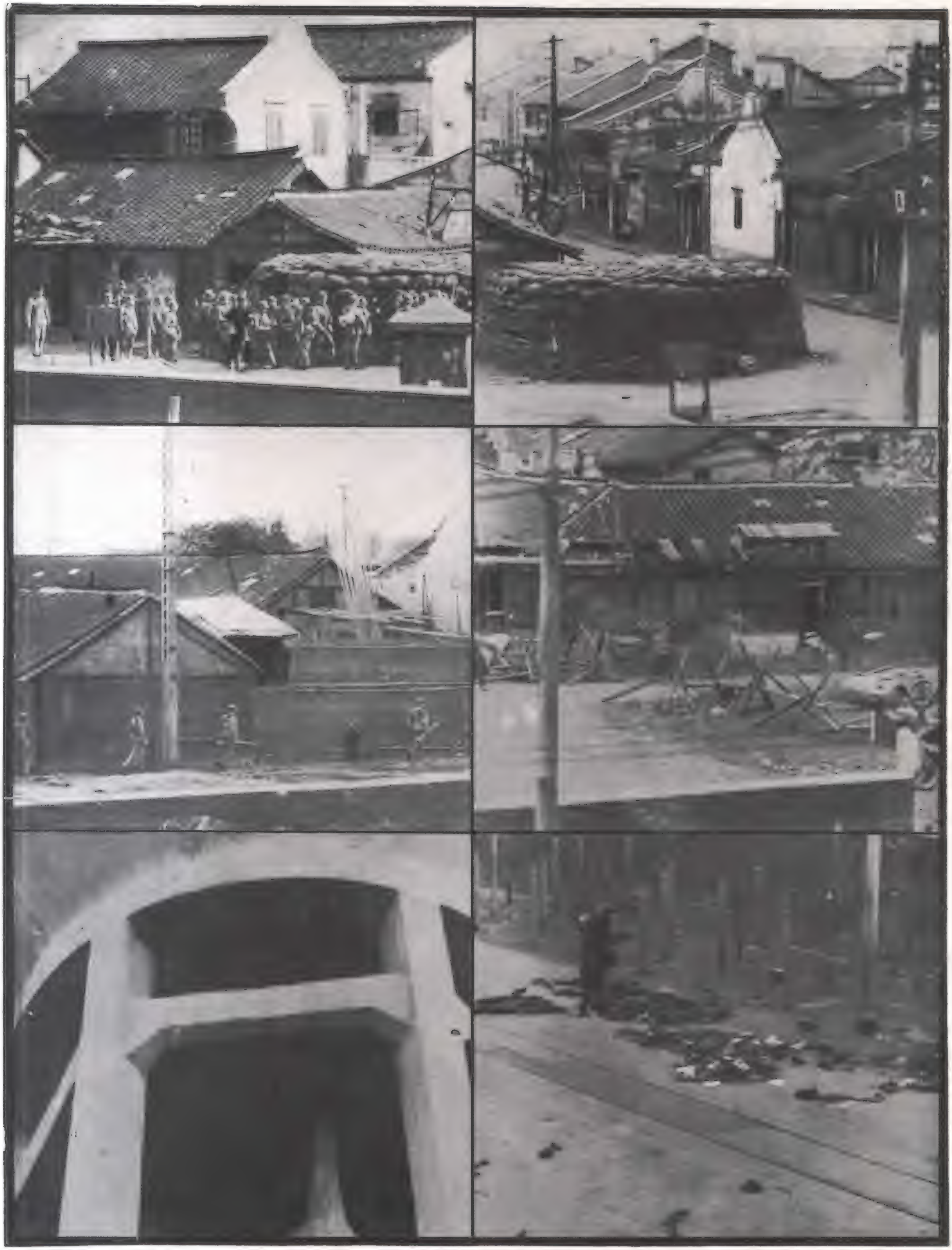
TOP ROW: *(Left)* Japanese tanks moving into position along Zia Zi Road, Nantao, in preparation to opening their bombardment of Chinese positions across Jih Hui Creek. *(Right)* Two Japanese "baby" tank speeding along Zia Zi Road on reconnoitering work. SECOND ROW: *(Left)* and *(Right)* Japanese shells landing on buildings just to the rear of the Chinese line of trenches along Jih Hui Creek. THIRD ROW: *(Left)* Burnt out bridge over Jih Hui Creek, a connecting link with Zia Zi Road and about 30 yards from the French Concession boundary. *(Right)* Bomb explosion to the rear of the Chinese front lines along the creek. BOTTOM ROW: *(Left)* Following a 40-minute bombardment of the Chinese positions from tanks and machineguns along the creek, Chinese forces withdrew into the French Concession. *(Right)* Japanese tank returning "home" after the battle.



TOP ROW: *(Left)* Jih Hui Creek bridge, on the morning of November 10. *(Right)* The same sector in the afternoon of November 10 with the fire dying out. SECOND ROW: *(Left)* Chinese soldiers walking nonchantly along their line of defenses during the morning of November 10. *(Right)* A Japanese tank returning to its line along Zia Zi Road. THIRD ROW: At 11 a.m. sharp, on the morning of November 11, these two Japanese large size tanks made their appearance along Zia Zi Road. *(Right)* On the opposite side of the creek, may be seen well-built defense works with the end of the line supported by a concrete "pillbox" only 20 yards from the French Concession. BOTTOM: *(Left)* Japanese tanks blasting away at the Chinese positions across the creek, under a smoke screen. *(Right)* Japanese smoke screen covering the area held by the Chinese.



TOP: *(Left)* Chinese soldiers retreating from Nantao over the Rue Pere Robert bridge into the French Concession, November 12. *(Right)* The Rue Pere Robert bridge which connects Nantao with the French Concession and over which several hundred Chinese soldiers retreated after the fall of Jih Hui Creek. MIDDLE: *(Left)* French tank on Route de Zikawei, across the Creek from Zia Zi Road, Nantao. *(Right)* Japanese soldiers on Zia Zi Road about 300 meters from Jih Hui Creek where Chinese soldiers are entrenched. BOTTOM: *(Left)* Chinese equipment strewn along Route de Zikawei, following the Chinese withdrawal from the corner of Zia Zi and Loo Ban Roads, Nantao. *(Right)* Chinese soldiers scrambling onto French Police vans, following their retreat into the French Concession at Rue Pere Robert.



TOP: *(Left)* Chinese troops still holding out at the corner of Zia Zi and Loo Ban Roads, Chapei, on the afternoon of November 12, but as can be noticed, ready to withdraw at any moment. *(Right)* The same spot twenty minutes after the picture on the left was taken, showing the deserted sandbag emplacement. At the time of the Chinese withdrawal Japanese troops were only 300 meters away. MIDDLE: *(Left)* Chinese troops in single file along Zia Zi Road, opposite the French Water Works. *(Right)* Chinese refugees on Zia Zi Road, evacuating before Japanese occupation. BOTTOM: *(Left)* The French Water Works tower, showing the spot where Mr. Pembroke Stephens met his death on the afternoon of November 12. *(Right)* Chinese equipment lying on Route de Zikawei following the Chinese withdrawal from Zia Zi Road.



TOP: *(Left)* Chinese Custom's Godown, Nantao Bund, in which Chinese troops made their last stand in the local area, November 12 with the Japanese flag hoisted above the building at 3.45 p.m, *(Right)* Shell hit on the building during the Japanese bombardment which was carried on throughout the morning and early afternoon. MIDDLE: *(Left)* Showing the corner f the Custom's wharf, where Chinese had built effective defense works with a line of communication trenches passing to buildings in the rear of Lee Maloo Road. *(Right)* A view of the battered building. BOTTOM: *(Left)* A direct hit on the Chinese defense works. The Nantao "boom" can be seen in the rear. *(Right)* Japanese destroyer moving up into position to further batter the Custom's Godown.



Chinese troops taking up positions along their lines which extended from Soochow to Kiangyin on the banks of the Yangtse river. The majority of these troops were at one time fighting in the Shanghai area from Lotien to Chapei, via Liuhong, Tazang, Miaohong and Kiangwan.



TOP: *(Left)* Chinese troops moving up into the lines near Soochow. *(Right)* Chinese dugouts and emplacements along the Wusih-Kiangyin front. MIDDLE: *(Left)* Chinese field piece at Soochow railway station on its way up to the front lines. *(Right)* Troops occupying the Wusih-Kiangyin line. BOTTOM: *(Left)* and *(Right)* Japanese equipment captured by Chinese forces while operating in the Chapei area.



Scenes during the "Victory Parade" of December 3 through the International Settlement. TOP: *(Left)* Heavy machine-gun mounted on military truck passing along Avenue Foch. *(Right)* Artillery units swinging around the corner of Avenue Haig and Avenue Foch, hugging the Settlement side. MIDDLE: *(Left)* Trench mortar unit passing along Avenue Foch. *(Right)* Machine-gun unit marching along Brenan Road, just after entering the Settlement from Keswick Road. BOTTOM: *(Left)* As the troops marched passed a British outpost along Keswick Road. (Right) Swinging onto Avenue Foch from Avenue Haig.



TOP ROW: *(Left)* Chinese civilians crowded into back streets, off the line of Japanese march, during their "Victory Parade" through the Settlement. *(Right)* All Chinese civilians were kept clear of Nanking Road at least one block away from the line of march. The picture shows Chekiang Road deserted as far back as Kiukiang Road. SECOND ROW: *(Left)* As traffic was closed on Boulevard de Montigny, Chinese congregated in the section between Avenue Joffre and Avenue Edouard VII during the "Victory Parade." *(Right)* Traffic jam along Rue du Consulate, caused through the diverting of traffic off Avenue Edward VII during the parade. THIRD and BOTTOM ROW: Chinese waiting patiently outside rice hongs to make their purchase of rice which is being issued out in restricted quantities by both the French and Settlement authorities.



On December 3, the Japanese staged a "Victory Parade" through the streets of the International Settlement and while proceeding along Nanking Road, a bomb was thrown into their midst to wound three soldiers and two policemen. The bomb thrower, an unidentified Chinese, was shot on Kwangse Road by a Chinese Police Constable. TOP: *(Left)* Japanese troops on the alert, following the bombing. *(Right)* The parade continues after twenty minutes interruption. MIDDLE: *(Left)* Passing the junction of Chekiang and Nanking Roads. *(Right)* The parade proceeding down Nanking Road. BOTTOM: *(Left)* The parade passing in front of the Sun Sun and Sincere Department Stores on Nanking Road. *(Right)* Artillerymen on Nanking Road.



TOP: *(Left)* Body of the Chinese bomb thrower, with a white sheet over his body, lying on Kwangse Road. *(Right)* The victim, lying on the pavement along Kwangse Road, being examined by the Japanese as he was dying. MIDDLE and BOTTOM: Four scenes of Nanking Road, immediately following the bomb explosion. Japanese troops scattered to both sides of the thoroughfare to take up positions for a distance of nearly two hundred yards, westward of Chekiang Road.



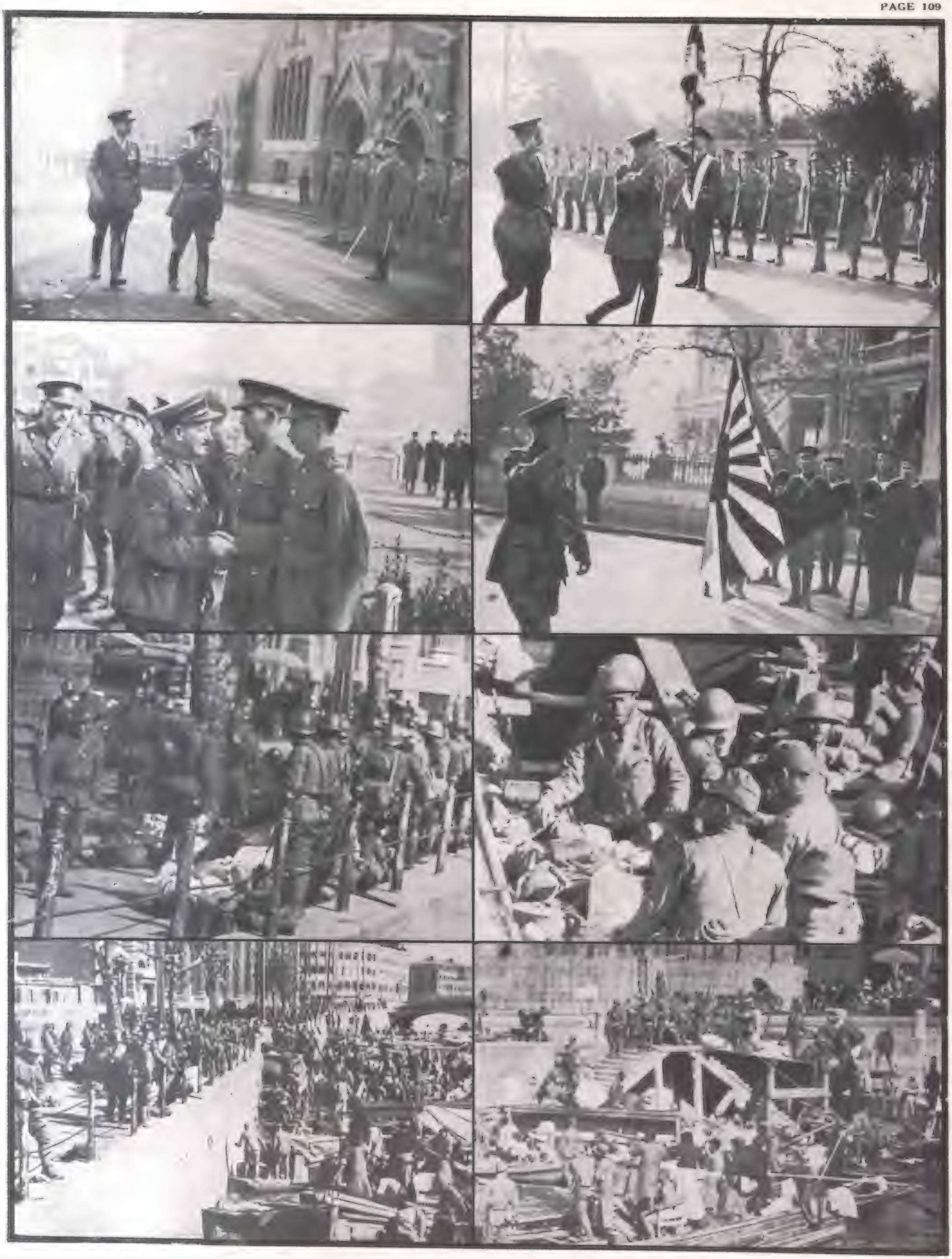
TOP: *(Left)* Wounded Japanese infantrymen placed into a private car following the bombing of the Japanese "Victory Parade" on Nanking Road, December 3. *(Right)* Wounded Japanese soldier being helped into a motor car. MIDDLE: *(Left)* Another one of the Japanese wounded on Nanking Road who was in great pain. *(Right)* Two of the three Japanese wounded awaiting transportation to hospital, following the bombing, lying at the entrance to the Sincere Department Store. BOTTOM: *(Left)* Japanese infantrymen help their wounded comrades from the scene of the bombing to the entrance of Sincere's. *(Right)* Negotiations going on following the bombing.



The day following the bombing on Nanking Road, Japanese supply trucks attempted to reach Nantao through the French Bund and were stopped by armoured cars and police of the Concession. TOP: *(Left)* The supply train brought to a halt at the junction of Avenue Edouard VII and the Bund. *(Right)* Negotiations under way between the Japanese and French authorities with armoured cars blocking the roadway along the French Bund. MIDDLE: *(Left)* Japanese members of the supply train in front of the Cenotaph at the end of Avenue Edouard VII. *(Right)* Japanese troops, members of the supply train on the Bund. BOTTOM: *(Left)* Negotiations going on between Japanese and French consular officials. *(Right)* Supply train proceeding through the Concession with armed French guards as escorts.



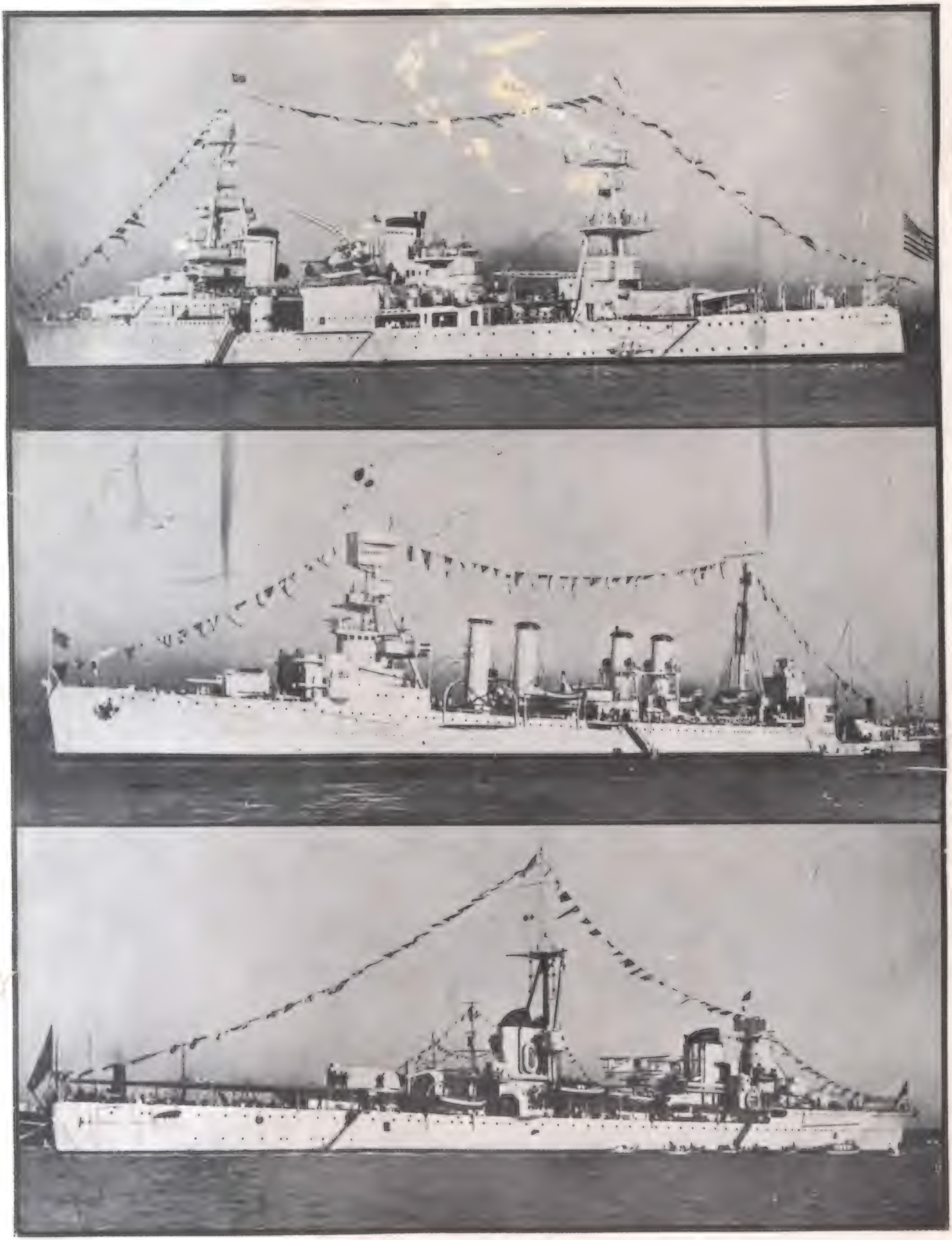
TOP: Colonel Price, commander of the 4th Regiment U.S. Marines, and General Beaumont, 2nd Marine Brigade commander, reviewing the troops of the 4th and 6th Regiments, which compr'se the 2nd Brigade, at the Shanghai Race Course on November 8. MIDDLE: "Eyes Right!" as the Marines passed the reviewing st:nd. BOTTOM: 4th Marines machinegun unit snappily marching pass during the parade, which was attended by a large group of spectators.



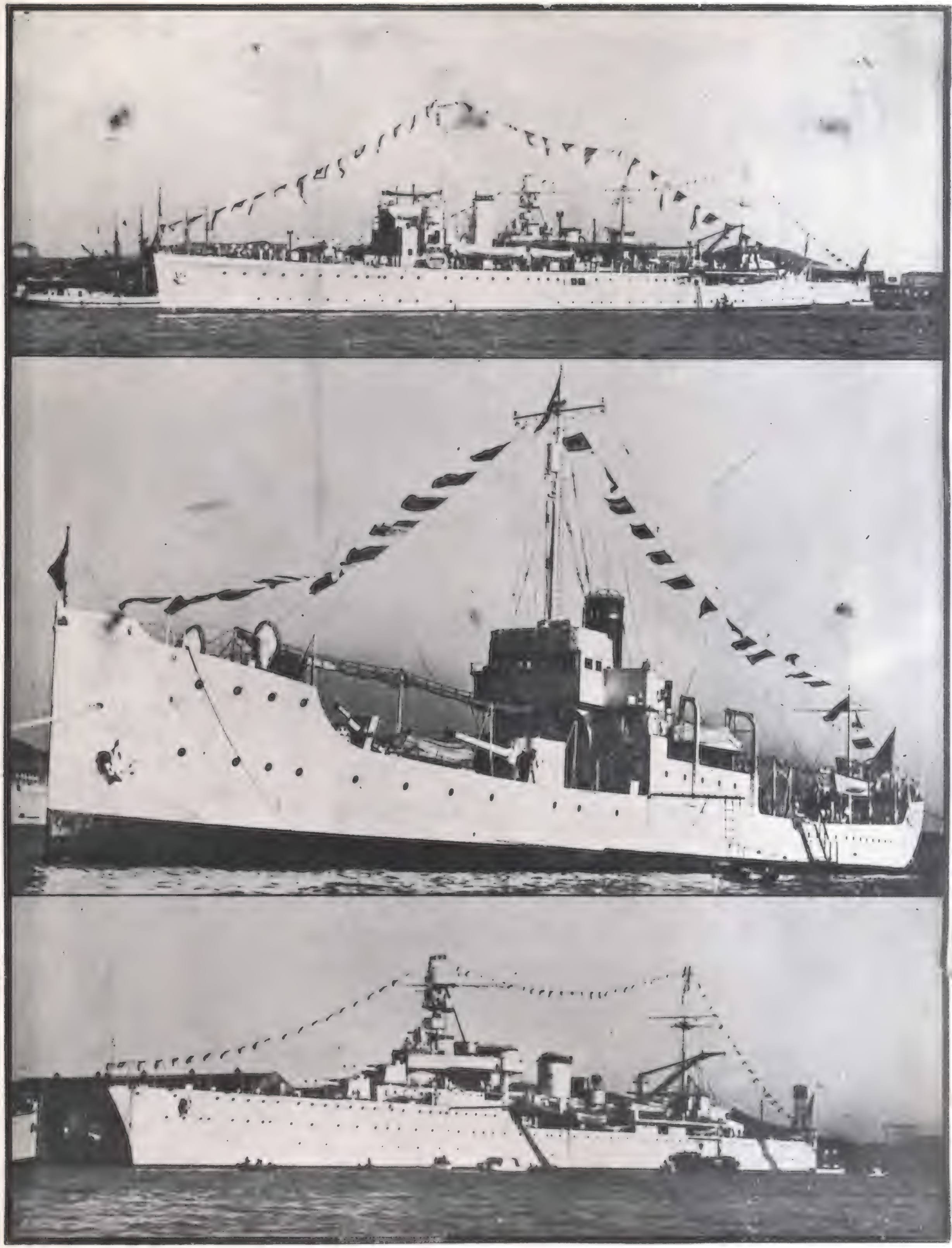
TOP and SECOND ROWS: Numerous members of the S.V.C. were on hand on December 9 at the S.M.C. Public Jetty to bid farewell to their former commander, Colonel F. R. W. Graham, D.S.O., M.C., who is returning to England. Members of the foreign defense units were also on hand to see him off. THIRD and FOURTH ROWS: Showing groups of Japanese soldiers, veterans of the local hostilities, returning to Shanghai by junks and boats from the Wusih and Changshu areas, Saturday, December 11. The troops disembarked from their water-crafts at North Soochow Road, alo ngside the Chinese Post Office building.



The Second Brigade, U.S. Marine Corps, comprising the Fourth and Sixth Regiments in Shanghai, paraded at the Race Course on December 13 for Admiral Harry E. Yarnell, Commander-in-Chief of the American Asiatic Fleet. TOP: *(Left to Right)* Colonel C. F. B. Price, Commander of the Fourth Regiment; Admiral Harry E. Yarnell; Major-General John C. Beamont, Commander of the Second Brigade. BELOW: Various views of the "march past" of both Regiments.



TOP: *U.S.S. Augusta*, flagship of the American Asiatic Fleet. MIDDLE: *U.S.S. Marblehead*. BOTTOM: Italian destroyer, *Montecuccoli*. All three are at present anchored off the Shanghai Bund. During the local hostilities, the *U.S.S, Augusta* was hit by a shell which killed one and wounded 18.



TOP: *H.M.S. Folkstone.* MIDDLE: French Gunboat, *Tahure.* BOTTOM: French Destroyer, *Lamotte Picquet.* Three more men-of-war anchored off the Shanghai Bund. Throughout the fighting in Pootung, the *Lamotte Picquet* remained at her berth on the Pootung side of the river.



TOP ROW: *(Left)* Scene on the Pukow waterfront after Japanese planes had laid their "eggs." *(Right)* Chinese artillery battery situated outside Nanking. SECOND ROW: *(Left)* Chinese refugees passing along Chung Shan Road in what became a wholesale exodus from the city when it became known that the Japanese were nearing Nanking. *(Right)* Barricade across one of Nanking's principal thoroughfares. THIRD ROW: *(Left)* Chinese armoured car on a siding at Pukow. *(Right)* Japanese equipment captured by Chinese along the Kiangyin-Wusih line. BOTTOM: *(Left)* Chinese heavy machinegun, outside Nanking, being prepared for operation. *(Right)* Chinese traitors, executed at Changchow, lying along the wayside as Chinese "swordsmen" rush forward.



TOP: Chinese artillerymen manning one of their heavy pieces at Hsiakwan, outside the Nanking City walls. MIDDLE: Chinese Infantrymen awaiting advancing Japanese outside Nanking. BOTTOM: With the rapid advance of Japanese units on to Nanking, following the Chinese withdrawal from the Shanghai area, new troops were rushed into Nanking.



TOP: *(Left)* Chinese large caliber gun outside the city of Nanking and used in its defense. *(Right)* Street scene in Nanking showing sandbag barricade thrown across one of its principal streets. *(Lower right)* Chinese artillerymen along the banks of the Yangtse river. MIDDLE: Chinese Infantrymen taking up positions outside Nanking. BOTTOM: Thousands of troops were poured into Nanking immediately following the Japanese threat to the city.













TOP: *(Left)* Japanese troops outside Nanking, viewing the city from a vantage point before the general attack. *(Right)* Japanese artillery units stretched out along Chungshan Road following their occupation of the city, December 13. MIDDLE: *(Left)* Japanese shell-burst which lande in Chinese ranks during their withdrawal from Nanking. *(Right)* The United States Gunboat Oahu, in the Whangpoo, [illegible] Bund, December 17, bringing survivors of the Panay bombing to Shanghai. BOTTOM: *(Left)* Lieut. Commander Tsobe, Japanese naval spokesman, boards the U.S.S. Augusta on the arrival of the survivors of the Panay bombing which took place off Hoshien, in the Yangtse river, Sunday, December 12. *(Right)* Survivors aboard the U.S.S. Oahu welcome the sight of the Shanghai Bund.

上海图书馆藏书
A541 222 0001 4481B